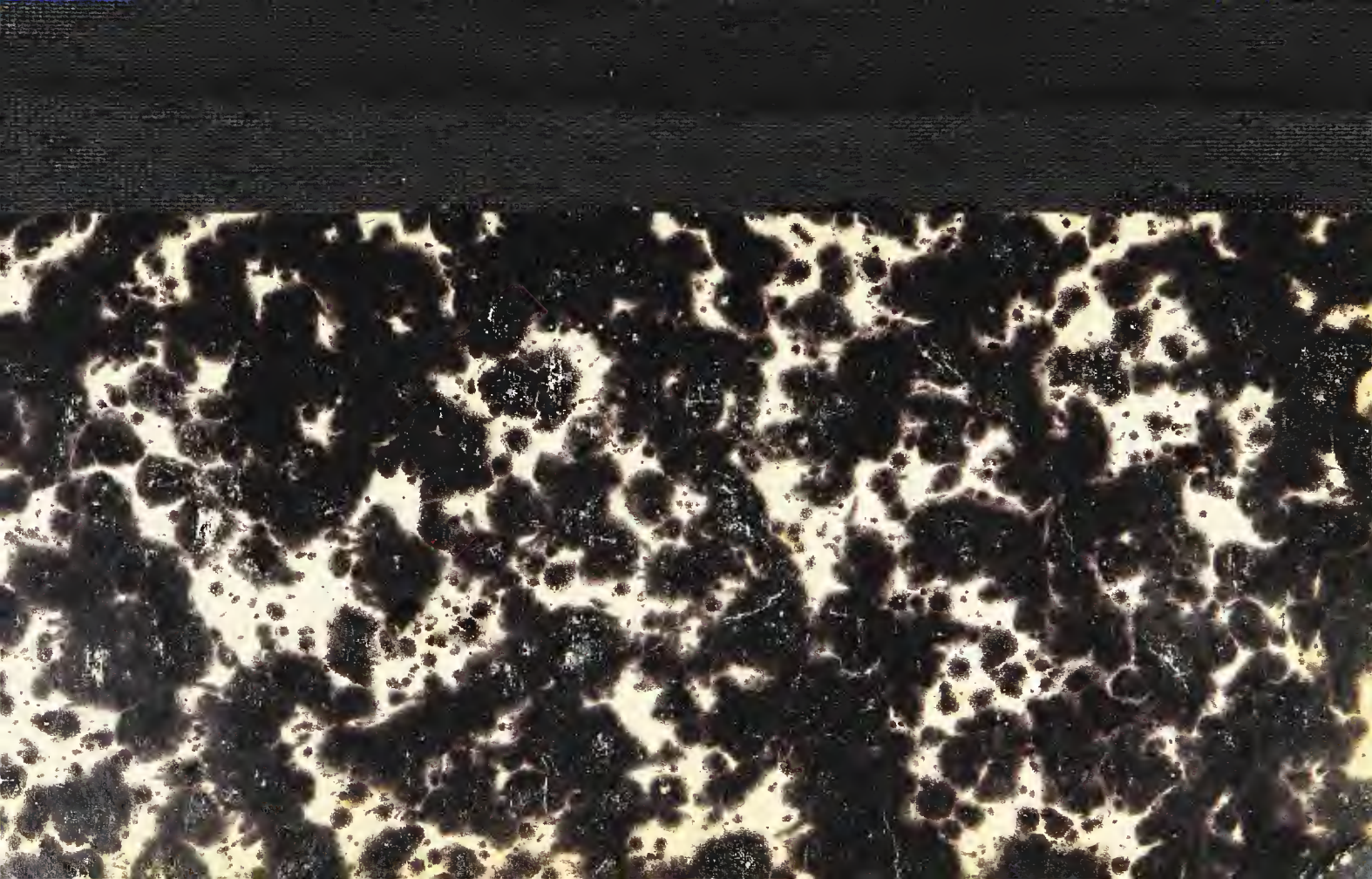


LETTER

TO CHEVALIER BUNSEN,

ON

THE CLASSIFICATION OF THE TURANIAN LANGUAGES.

BY MAX MÜLLER, M.A.,

TAYLORIAN PROFESSOR OF MODERN EUROPEAN LANGUAGES, OXFORD.

London 1854

LETTER

ON THE

CLASSIFICATION OF THE TURANIAN LANGUAGES.

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.

"*Which of the languages of Hindustán belong to the Arian stock, and which to the Indian family of languages prevalent before the Iranian immigrations, is a disputed point, which we hope will be brought nearer to a settlement by Dr. Müller's lecture this day.*" These were the words in which you did me the honour of introducing me to the British Association at Oxford, in 1847, when laying before the Meeting of that Society the results of your researches into the origin and affiliation of the languages of mankind. But the hope you then expressed was not realized; and I fear that, if you have looked again over my paper as it stands printed in the Transactions of the British Association, it may have disappointed you. The great question, the question of real historical interest, the connexion, namely, of the southern languages of India with any other established family of speech, was in my essay hardly touched on. I had to confine myself there to a vindication of the Arian descent of the northern languages of India — a task which to you may

have appeared almost useless, and is indeed of small importance if compared with that other problem, the origin of the southern dialects.

I, therefore, gladly avail myself of your permission; and, in the space which you kindly allow me in your new work on the philosophy of language, I shall endeavour to state my view of this much controverted question, the origin of the southern dialects of India. It is a question intimately connected with some of the greatest problems of comparative philology, and its solution must depend not only on facts, but on the establishment of principles which may or may not be applicable to a classificatory study of languages. I fear, however, that at present I shall hardly be able to do justice to a subject so difficult and comprehensive. During the last three years my linguistic studies have necessarily taken a very different course, and I have directed my chief attention, away from India and the Southern Peninsula of Asia, to that Western Peninsula of the great Asiatic continent where all the languages, religions, and arts of the old world seem to have been stored up for the present, and formed into what we now call the modern world of Europe. I must, therefore, crave your indulgence, and that of your readers, for this somewhat hurried composition; materials collected several years ago and never intended for publication: and, though I hope I shall be able to defend what I have stated, either as fact or as theory, in the course of this letter, I trust that others, more competent than myself, will take up and will solve a problem that I have ventured to state at your instance, and which, up to a certain point, I hope to elucidate.

That it was not quite unnecessary to establish beyond reasonable doubt the Sanskrit origin of the Bengáli and the other dialects of Northern India, is shown by a remark which a writer of considerable authority on ethnological subjects has since made on that essay. In a work lately published on the

Varieties of Man, the author says: "It is not likely any better case will be made out for this (the Sanskrit origin of the Bengáli and its cognate dialects) than the one contained in a Dissertation of Dr. Max Müller. Yet it is so unsatisfactory that it almost proves the question the other way." Now, it is very true that these languages do contain many features which are apt to deceive us about their real origin and character. There are not only many words of Turanian and Semitic origin which, through channels opened by Mohammedan and Mongolian conquests, have found their way into these dialects, but there is also a whole layer of aboriginal words, words now belonging to the south of India, but yet of every-day use, in the spoken dialects of the north. Some of them have found their way even into the dictionary of the Sanskrit.* Besides, and this is a more important feature, the very grammar of the northern dialects has been infected by the same influences to an extent to which we find analogies only in some of the modern languages of Europe. It is very true that the grammatical system of a language repels foreign intrusions, as every living organism repels mechanical influences. But still the grammar of a language may, to a certain extent, accommodate itself to the genius of a foreign tongue with which it is brought into constant contact. It may imitate, though it does not adopt or borrow. Instances of this occur in the English of the Norman period †; and in medieval chronicles we find Latin terminations occasionally appended to German words. In Albanian and Bulgarian the peculiarity of placing the article at the end, and not at the beginning of a substantive, was probably borrowed from the Wallachian, in which *domnul*, i. e. *dominus ille*,

* See several articles by Dr. Stevenson in the Journals of the Asiatic Societies of Madras and Bombay.

† See Thommerel, Recherches sur la Fusion du Franco-Normand et de l'Anglo-Saxon, 1841. In phrases such as "zour honorabile lettres conten*and*," or "brek*and* the trewis" (Let. de G. Douglas à Richard II., 1385), we actually find a French grammatical termination, though its introduction may have been facilitated by the similarity of the Anglo-Saxon termination of the gerunds in *ende*.

had become fixed instead of *il domnu*, i. e. *ille dominus*. The Latin of Ennius also offers a case in point, and even Cicero uses Greek terminations, not only after Greek, but also after Latin words* W. von Humboldt, in his posthumous work "On the Diversity of the Construction of Human Language, and its Influence on the Intellectual Development of Mankind," speaks of the same thing, where he determines the influence which the sacred language of the Buddhists—the Pali—exercised on the spoken Burmese (p. 380.). But we have, perhaps, the most striking instance in Persian, which, in such forms as "gul-i-keniz," the rose of the maid, "dil-i-men," or "dilem," my heart, has adopted, no doubt after Semitic models, a syntactical principle not only at variance with, but diametrically opposed to, all Indo-European grammar. On this more hereafter.

Influences of the same kind are traceable in the northern languages of India; and to a superficial observer they are likely to prove dangerous, and lead to false conclusions or unfounded scepticism. To give an instance: It is a characteristic feature of the southern languages of India, that they distinguish the plural from the singular by adding to the

* The following Greek terminations occur in Latin writers:—

First Declension:	Nom. ê	Gen. ês	Acc. ên	Abl. ê
	âs	„ —	„ ân	„ —
	ês	„ —	„ ên	„ ê
Second Declension:	Nom. ŏs	Gen. (u)	Acc. ŏn	
	on	„ —	„ on	
	ûs	„ (û)	„ ûn	
	ôs	„ ô	„ ôn, ô	
Third Declension:	Nom. —	Gen. os	Acc. ă	Dat. ĭ
	eus	„ eŏs	„ eă	„ ei, î
	es	„ eŏs, ûs	„ eă (ê?)	„ —
	is	„ ios, eos	„ in	„ —
	ys, y	„ yos	„ yn	„ —
	o	„ ûs	„ ô	„ ô
Plur. Nom.	ĕs, îs	„ ôn	„ ăs, îs	„ si, sin
Neutr.	ê	„ —	„ —	„ —

See Schneider's Latin Grammar, Berlin, 1819, vol. iii.

noun a suffix expressive of plurality. In order to form the cases of the plural, they affix afterwards the same terminations which form the different cases of the singular. This is a grammatical expedient foreign to the Arian languages, even in their secondary stages, though, in itself, it is by no means incompatible with any of the leading features of Arian grammar.

In Asamese, "manuh" is man, and without an affix to limit its signification it may be used either for the singular or plural. It may mean man, a man, the man; men, or the men.

The Genitive is manuh-or;
Dative, manuh-oloi;
Accusative, manuh-ok;
Locative, manuh-ot;
Ablative, manuh-e.

If we want to express the plural distinctly, we must add bilak, hont, or bur, particles expressive of plurality; and by affixing the same terminations as in the singular, we get

Nominative, manuh-bilak;
Genitive, manuh-bilak-or;
Dative, manuh-bilak-oloi;
Accusative, manuh bilak-ok;
Locative, manuh-bilak-ot;
Ablative, manuh-bilak-e.*

We can easily imagine how people speaking the modern Sanskrit dialects, in which the old terminations by which the plural was distinguished from the singular had been worn off almost entirely, should, when again feeling a want to express the idea of plurality more distinctly, have fixed upon a grammatical expedient which, from their daily intercourse with their aboriginal neighbours, had long been familiar to their

* See N. Brown's Grammatical Notices of the Asamese Language: Sibsagor, 1848.

ear and to their minds. The words which they used as the exponents of plurality were of course taken from the resources of their own language; but the idea of using such words for such a purpose seems to have been suggested by a foreign example.

It was necessary, therefore, to state the case fully, and to prove, once for all, that the Bengáli, the Asamese, the language of the Odra, the Hindi and Hindustáni, the Mahratti, the language of Konkana, the Guzerati and Sindhi, the Khasiya or Parbatiya, and the language of Kashmir, are all of Arian descent; that the blood which circulates in their grammar, is Arian blood. If I have succeeded in proving this (and if proved for the Bengáli, it is proved for all the rest), I consider it established, at the same time, that the other languages of India, spoken principally south of the Krishná, are of different origin. But beyond this I did not venture to go. My conviction was then, and is now still more strongly, that these *southern dialects belong to the Turanian family of languages;* that in their dictionary, however, as well as in their grammar, they are largely indebted to their Arian neighbours. But, although I was satisfied myself on this point, I felt at the same time that it involved questions of so great importance that the subject should not be taken up lightly. Nay, I was afraid my advocacy might prejudice the question rather unfavourably, and I thought it ought to be left to persons better qualified than myself to solve this linguistic and ethnological problem.

Even now, in answer to your kind inquiries, I should rather have adopted the negative method of arguing; I mean, I should rather have exhausted possibilities, and proved that these same languages cannot be referred to any other race from which, as far as history and geography go, they might possibly have sprung. I might have endeavoured to show they are neither Semitic, nor Chinese, nor Indo-Chinese, nor Malay, nor idioms transplanted from the east coast of Africa. The characteristic

features of all these languages, with the exception, perhaps, of the last, are sufficiently well known to make it possible to prove their absence in the languages of the Dekhan. However, as you wish it, I shall lay my case before you in a more positive form, leaving it to you to judge whether, even in its imperfect state, it deserves the consideration which you were kind enough to accord to it.

FIRST CHAPTER.

First Section.

History of Turanian Philology.

It is necessary for our purpose, to begin with a general statement on the Turanian family of speech, and to give a short sketch of the progress of Turanian philology. It is a branch of study involving problems of the highest importance for the early history of mankind, and which no doubt would have found greater favour in the eyes of comparative philologists, if the number of languages belonging to this family had not been so large as to make an accurate and philological study of the whole stock an impossibility. The maxim, not to write *about* a language if one cannot write *in* it, is certainly a most salutary one; but it must be given up in so comprehensive a subject as that of Turanian speech in its endless ramifications. In all classificatory sciences the same allowance is made; and if a comparative anatomist is able to arrange by general characteristics animals of which he has seen but slight sketches, and of which he hardly remembers or can pronounce the names, perhaps it may be possible also to classify the Turanian languages without possessing so familiar a knowledge of them as is required for more special or practical purposes.

1. GYARMATHI.

The connexion and family-resemblance of some of the widely separated branches of the Turanian stock, had been discovered and established at a time when the name of the Arian or Indo-European family was still unknown. The close relationship between Hungarian, Finnic, Lapponic, and Esthonic was fully proved by Gyarmathi * in 1799; and he quotes one work, published by Sajnovits in 1770

* Affinitas Linguæ Hungaricæ cum Linguis Fennicæ Originis grammatice demonstrata. Auctore Samuele Gyarmathi, M. D.: Gottingæ, 1799.

("Demonstratio Idioma Hungaricum et Lapponicum idem esse"), and another, published by Hager in 1793, as books of authority in which this point had been established before. If we consider that Gyarmathi's work was written before even the foundation of the science of comparative philology was laid, he deserves to occupy a very high rank among the founders of this science. His comparisons are not mere comparisons of words. In order to establish the common origin of his own language and those of Finland and Lapland, he derives his arguments from their similarity in derivative suffixes, the system of declension and conjugation, the pronouns and their various employments, the postpositions and adverbs, the syntactical rules; and in the last instance only, as he says, from the "similitudo vocabulorum multorum, quod quidem momentum mihi semper ultimum in istiusmodi disquisitionibus esse solet." Indeed, his parallel columns of grammatical forms from Hungarian, Finnic, Esthonic, and Lapponic can leave no reasonable doubt as to the original identity of these idioms. He rejects, however, distinctly the idea of a similar connexion between these languages and Turkish. The number of words common to both, as collected by Gyarmathi, is considerable; but, as he could not discover any similarity in their grammatical system, he repudiated the idea of a Finno-Tataric family. A contrary opinion was expressed at the same time by Kollar, who maintained that Turkish and Hungarian agreed in the leading features of their grammar, but denied the similarity of their vocables. It should be mentioned at once that the principal argument which Gyarmathi brings forward against the grammatical affinity of Hungarian and Turkish, is derived from the pronominal elements, which, he says, differ so much as to exclude for ever the possibility of a common origin. We shall see, however that exactly in the pronominal elements the most striking coincidences have since been established.

2. KLAPROTH, RÉMUSAT, ARNDT.

The first step in advance after Gyarmathi was made by Klaproth*, who proved that the languages of the Caucasus, with the exception

* Klaproth, Reise in den Kaukasus, 1814. Asia Polyglotta, 1823, p. 133.

of the Ossetic, have a great similarity with the Samoïedic or North Asiatic dialects; while Rémusat, though in a different way, contributed toward the solution of the same problem by his "Recherches sur les Langues Tartares" (1820).*

Rémusat denied the affinity of the Turkish, Mongol, and Mandshu languages. He says ("Recherches," p. 138.): "La ressemblance de quelques expressions Turkes, Mongoles, et Mandshoues entre elles ne doit pas faire penser qu'il existe entre les trois langues une analogie essentielle et fondamentale. Il y a entre elles plus de différences qu'il n'y en a entre le Russe, l'Italien, et l'Allemand." This, as is well known now, might be admitted without any prejudice to the question at issue.

Arndt†, in 1819, tried to prove that the Bask, in the westernmost corner of Europe, belonged to the same family with the Finnic and Samoïedic; nay, that Celtic also clung with some of its roots to the same ancient stratum of speech.

3. RASK

The first, however, to trace with a bold hand the broad outlines of Turanian, or, as he called it, Scythian philology, was Rask.‡ He proved that Finnic had once been spoken in the northern extremities of Europe, and that allied languages extended like a girdle over the north of Asia, Europe, and America. In his inquiries into the origin of the Old Norse, he endeavoured to link the idioms of Asia and America together by means of the Grönland language, which, he maintains, is a scion of the Scythian or Turanian stock, spreading its branches over the north of America, and thus indicating the ante-diluvian bridge between the continents of Europe and America. According to Rask, therefore, the Scythian would form a layer of language extending in Asia from the White Sea to the valleys of

* Abel-Rémusat, Recherches sur les Langues Tartares, 1820.

† Ch. G. von Arndt, Über den Ursprung der Europäischen Sprachen, published 1817, and again 1827; but written about 1800, during the Russian period of comparative philology.

‡ R. K. Rask, Ueber die Thrakische Sprachclasse, 1818; R. Rask, Ueber das Alter und die Echtheit der Zend-Sprache, deutsch von H. von der Hagen, 1826.

Caucasus, in America from Grönland southward, and in Europe (as Rask accepts Arndt's views) from Finland as far as Britain, Gaul, and Spain. This original substratum was broken up and overwhelmed first by Celtic inroads, secondly by Gothic, and thirdly by Slavonic immigrations; so that its traces appear like the peaks of mountains and promontories out of a general inundation. Only on the north of Asia and its central plains, probably the original hive of the Scythic stock, has the race maintained itself in compact masses, and sent forth even in historical times those swarms of soldiers who made the walls of every capital in the Arian world tremble before them. Rask maintains distinctly the affinity of the Finnic and Tataric idioms, and he denies that the coincidences between the two are simply of a lexicographic character. Again, the three races of Tatars, Mongols, and Tungusians, whom even Klaproth, after admitting a connexion between the languages of the Caucasus and Siberia, considered as distinct, are traced back by Rask to one common type of language and grammar. In maintaining the relationship of these and the Finnic races, great stress is laid by him on what were then considered mixed races of Tatar and Finnic descent,—the Woguls, Wotiaks, and Tsheremissians. Rask denies their mixed character; because, he says, these tribes are peculiarly exclusive in their marriages, and hardly allow members of different tribes to reside among them. Their languages should, therefore (to give Rask's conclusion), be considered, not mixed dialects, but intermediate links in one great chain of speech.

Rask proposed the following division of the Scythian race:

1. North Asiatic.
2. North American.
3. Tatar.
4. Mongol and Tungusian.

4. SCHOTT, CASTREN.

Unfortunately, Rask did not live to fill in the grand outlines of this ethnological cartoon. But, as, for his more minute researches into the grammatical growth of the Teutonic languages, he found a worthy successor in Grimm, his attempts to explore the large area of the Scythian world were ably continued by Schott and by Castrén. In Germany, Schott's articles kept alive an interest in these re-

searches. In his essay on the Tataric languages (1836) he stated the problem boldly, and in his work on the Altaic or Finno-Tataric race (1849) he has collected all the evidence that could be brought to bear on its solution. But a new era in the history of Turanian philology begins with one who, though in delicate health, left his study, travelled for years alone in his sledge through the snowy deserts of Siberia, coasted along the borders of the Polar Sea, lived for whole winters in caves of ice or in the smoky huts of greasy Samoïeds, then braved the sand-clouds of Mongolia, passed the Baikal, and returned from the frontiers of China to his duties as Professor at Helsingfors—to die, after he had given to the world but a few specimens of his treasures. This heroic grammarian was Alexander Castrén.* The general results at which he arrived, though based on fuller materials and more accurate research, tend on the whole to confirm Rask's views.

Castrén establishes five divisions of the Turanian family, in place of the four given by Rask. Besides, as Castrén leaves the North American dialects altogether out of consideration, his researches have really added two new distinctions, the North Asiatic and the Mongol class having each been split by him into two. Thus we have, according to Castrén, the following classes: —

1. Finnic 2. Samoïedic	} North Asiatic according to Rask.
3. Turkic	Tatar according to Rask.
4. Mongolic 5. Tungusic	} Mongol-Tungusic according to Rask.

In the subdivision also differences occur. The Tshudic class,

* Castrén, Elementa Grammatices Syrjænæ. Helsingforsiæ, 1844.
„ Elementa Grammatices Tscheremissæ. Kuopio, 1845.
„ Vom Einfluss des Accents in der Lappländischen Sprache. Petersburg, 1845.
„ Versuch einer Ostjakischen Sprachlehre. Petersburg, 1849.
„ De Affixis Personalibus Linguarum Altaicarum. Helsingforsiæ, 1850.
„ Reiseerinnerungen aus den Jahren, 1838 — 1844. Petersburg, 1853.

which is the name given by Rask to the Finnic, had been divided by him into I. the Finnic; II. the Ugric; III. the Byarmic stock:

I. *The Finnic stock, according to Rask, has five branches.*

a. Tsheremissian,
b. Mordvinian,
c. Suomian (*i. e.* Finnish),
d. Lapponian,
e. Esthonian.

II. *The Ugric, three.*

a. Hungarian, *b.* Vogulian, *c.* Ostiakian.

III. *The Byarmic, three.*

a. Permian, *b.* Syrianian, *c.* Votiakian.

To this Castrén demurs. He insists on separating I. *a*, and I. *b*, the Tsheremissian and Mordvinian, and considers that the two (to which he formerly added the Tshuvashian) constitute a new branch. According to Castrén, therefore, we get the following stemma of the Finnic stock:

1. Finnic.

I. *Ugric.*	II. *Bulgaric.*	III. *Permic.*	IV. *Tshudic.*
a. Hungarian,	*a.* Tsheremissian,	1. Permian,	1. Lapponian,
b. Vogulian,	*b.* Mordvinian.	2. Syrianian,	2. Suomian.
c. Ugro-Ostiakian.		3. Wotiakian,	3. Esthonian.

The second, or Samoïedic class, is divided by Castrén into a Northern and an Eastern stock:

2. Samoïedic.

I. The *Northern* comprises:
a. Yurazian,
b. Tawgian,
c. Yeniseian.

II. The *Eastern* comprises:
a. Ostiako-Samoïedian,
b. Kamassian.

The Turkic or Tataric class, to which Castrén has devoted less

attention, is given here after Beresin. He establishes three stocks, each with a number of branches:

3. Tataric.

I. *Tshagataic* (South-East).	II. *Tataric* (North).	III. *Turkish* (West).
a. Uigurian,	*a.* Kirgisian,	*a.* Derbendian,
b. Komanian,	*b.* Bashkirian,	*b.* Aderbidshanian,
c. Tshagataian,	*c.* Nogaian,	*c.* Krimmian,
d. Usbekian,	*d.* Kumian,	*d.* Anatolian (Asia Minor),
e. Turkomanian,	*e.* Karatshaian,	*e.* Rumelian (Constantinople).
f. Kasanian.	*f.* Karakalpakian,	
	g. Meshtsheryakian,	
	h. Siberian (Yakutian on the Lena).	

The Mongolic class has likewise been divided into three stocks. Castrén in his travels came into special contact with the Mongols about the Baikal, where he studied the language of the Buriates:

4. Mongolic.

I. *Eastern Mongols.*	II. *Western Mongols* (Olöt).	III. *Baikal-Mongols.*
a. Sharra-Mongols,	*a.* Kalmüks, Choshot, Dsungar, Torgod, and Dúrbet,	*a.* Buriates.
b. Khalkhas,	*b.* Aimaks (North of Persia),	
c. Sharaigol (Tibet).	*c.* Tokpas (North-East of Tibet).	

The fifth class, the *Tungusic*, is principally represented by the *Mandshu*. This language received its name when it became of political and literary importance, after the Tungusian conquest of China,

in the 17th century. Tungusian dialects are spoken by the *Tshapogires* and *Orotongs* in the west, and the *Lamutes* in the east, of Siberia. Castrén studied the dialect of Nyertshinsk.

Thus we have:

5. TUNGUSIC.

I. *Western.*	II. *Eastern.*
a. Tshapogires,	*a.* Lamutes,
b. Orotongs,	*b.* Mandshu (in China).
c. Nyertshintk dialect (Castrén).	

Castrén, in his dissertation "De Affixis Personalibus Linguarum Altaicarum" (1850), after tracing minutely one of the most characteristic features of Turanian grammar through all the branches of what he calls the Altaic (*i. e.* Turanian) race, concludes with the following remarks: "What has been brought forward about the origin, the formation, the sound, and the whole character of these personal affixes, seems to prove that all the Altaic dialects are more or less related to one another. Some of them are certainly widely distant; as, for instance, the dialects of the Finnic nations in the west, and of the Mongolic and Tungusic tribes in the east. But their difference is not greater than could easily have originated in the course of a thousand years, and these must have elapsed since the separation of these nations took place. During the same time almost all the Altaic tribes came in contact with foreign nations, and received from them the seeds of their present civilisation. New ideas created new words and new forms — nay, a new principle — in the evolution of these languages. Many things were adopted, many things framed after the type of other tongues. It is the office of comparative philology to find out in every language what owes its origin to a modern evolution. And only after this has been done, will a disquisition on the affinity of languages become safe and profitable. I am fully persuaded that an intercomparison of the Altaic languages would as yet be premature; and I have, therefore, in my dissertation attended principally to the single languages, and only mentioned coincidences in the formation of the personal affixes incidentally. Perhaps it will be my lot at another time to demonstrate the affinity of the Altaic languages in a more convincing manner."

We see, in these words, Castrén's conviction on the affinity of all the Altaic languages expressed clearly, though with caution and modesty. Another passage in the same dissertation bears on this point. He says: "After studying for a long number of years Finnic, Samoïedic, Turkic, Mongolic, and Tungusic dialects, it seems, as far as I can see from my own researches, that we must not look in them for so close a relationship as that by which the Indo-Germanic languages are held together like so many branches of one and the same stock. But that there exists between them both a formal and a material congruence, particularly between Finnic, Samoïedic, and Turkic, I maintain still, as I stated it some time ago. Whether this congruence is so great as to enable us to trace all these dialects back to one common source, is a question which the next generation may hope to answer. To us it seems that these idioms branch off together, and dissolve themselves into different stems or families, but that they still belong to one class or race. Certain it is, that they are more related to one another than to any of the Indo-European languages."

5. VON DER GABELENTZ.

Von der Gabelentz has treated the same question in his grammatical outlines, and in several articles devoted to Turanian philology published in the "Zeitschrift für die Kunde des Morgenlands." By a previous study of the Arian languages, Von der Gabelentz was admirably prepared for this larger sphere of linguistic research, and his works give full evidence of his great power of observation and a most comprehensive grasp in arranging. According to his opinion also, the Turanian languages — Tataric, Mongolic, Tungusic, and Finnic — constitute one family. This at least seems to be his last conviction, at which he arrived after a continued study of these idioms; and it is the more valuable, because in his earlier works — for instance, in his Mandshu grammar (1832) — he entertained a different view: admitting the striking resemblance between the grammatical and phonetic systems of the Mandshu, Tataric, and Mongolic dialects, but not allowing their affinity.

6. BOEHTLINGK.

If we may quote Von der Gabelentz as a high authority in favour of the common origin of the Turanian languages, there is another scholar, of no less weight, particularly where questions of grammatical detail are concerned, who has lately thrown considerable doubt on this subject; I mean Professor Boehtlingk, in his work "Über die Sprache der Jakuten" (1851). It is a work of the most massive industry, and it bids fair to raise the science of Tataric grammar to the level of Greek and Sanskrit philology. It is particularly important for the more special study of the Tataric languages, because, according to Professor Boehtlingk, the Yakute dialect became separated at a very early time from the still undivided Turko-Tataric speech, and therefore exhibits a most primitive specimen of what he proposes to call, instead of Turkic or Tataric, the Yakuto-Turkic class. An admixture of Mongolian words in Yakutian, and an adoption even of Mongolian grammatical terminations, is explained by a long-continued historical contact between Yakutic and Buriatic tribes. But this work throws also much light on questions of a more general bearing. The Introduction particularly contains most valuable remarks on the true principles which ought to guide us in the classification of languages. Professor Boehtlingk afterwards enters more particularly into the question of the affinity between the Finnic, Samoïedic, and Tataric classes of the Turanian race. On this point he has been engaged in a long controversy with Professor Schott of Berlin, a controversy carried on with an animosity something more than Attic. Professor Boehtlingk stands up for the principle that it is dangerous to write on languages of which we do not possess the most accurate knowledge. Professor Schott, on the contrary, thinks that a limited knowledge is sufficient for settling the general question as to the common origin of languages. No doubt Professor Boehtlingk has proved that several words and forms which Professor Schott supposed to be mutually related are different in origin, and that, with his method, he cannot guard altogether against similar mistakes. In so comprehensive a comparison of the Turanian idioms as Professor Schott undertakes, errors must occur which, in the present state of comparative philology, an Arian scholar can easily avoid in his more limited and more matured researches.

No one who has studied in the school of Bopp and Pott would think of comparing ἀνάλογος with German "ähnlich," Persian "behter" with English "better," German "ei," egg, with English "eye;" or even Greek ἰός, poison, with ἰός, arrow; Greek νέω and νέω, Latin "nare" and "nere." In a comparison of Turanian dialects, erroneous comparisons like these would be more difficult to avoid. Nor would it be possible always, in the present state of Turanian philology, to discover that words so different as "même" and "semetipsissimus," "larme" and "tear," "rédemption" and "rançon," "age" and "eternity,' "cousin" and "sister," were originally identical. There are certainly some very strong points which Professor Boehtlingk has established against Professor Schott; as, for instance, his comparison of the possessive affix lyk (Tataric) and ly (Osmanli) with the Teutonic lich, lik, and ly in "friendly." Yet, after his philological fury is relieved, Professor Boehtlingk never represses a natural impulse of honesty and fairness. He says: "If Professor Schott, in his work on the 'Altaic or Finno-Tataric Languages,' had no other purpose than by a massive collection of words and roots, apparently connected, to make it seem likely that the Ural-Altaic languages stand to each other in a nearer degree of relationship than to other languages, one cannot help admitting that he has gained his point. But, after this is admitted, we must insist all the more strongly, that, before the single classes have been studied more accurately and raised to the standard of comparative grammar, an end should be put to further labours of this kind."

It is evident from this, that, while Professor Boehtlingk from his point of view considers such preliminary researches as without the pale of science ("unwissenschaftlich"), he forgets that they involve questions of great and pressing importance, and that, on the threshold of every science, attempts of this kind are necessary, nay useful. Without Frederick Schlegel, we should have had no Bopp and Pott; without Sir William Jones, no Colebrooke and Wilson. We are but too much inclined, particularly when science becomes a profession, to mistake the means for the object, and to lose sight of those problems to which our professional studies are but subservient. It should be remembered that what is now called comparative philology is, after all, only a means toward a solution of some of the most important philosophical and historical questions.

However, the great question here before us may be stated in a different manner, and the answer that can be given even now will be such as to satisfy all purposes of ethnological research. The first question is this: "Supposing the Finnic, Samoïedic, Tataric, Mongolic, and Tungusic languages had no original affinity, is it possible to account for the coincidences which have already been pointed out between them?" If not, the next question is: "Supposing they had one and the same source, can we account for the differences such as have been pointed out between them?" To this latter question, I think, the answer will be in the affirmative, if we consider for a moment the relation between languages such as Portuguese and Sanskrit, and if we take into consideration the peculiar circumstances under which the dialects of the Turanian nations have grown up. It is this latter point which requires a more particular consideration.

Second Section.

General Division of Languages into Family, Nomad, and State Languages.

The *Turanian* languages may be characterised as *nomadic*, in opposition to the *Arian* languages, which, in their grammatical and etymological economy, partake of what may be called a *political* character. A similar idea is expressed etymologically, though perhaps not intentionally, in the very names of Turanian and Arian—the former being derived from a root meaning "to be swift," "to roam about;" the latter, from a root which is best known to us in the Latin *arare*, the Greek ἀρόω. From this ancient root, AR, we have in Sanskrit, *ărya**, which meant originally a husbandman, a man of the third caste, a Vaisya; then took the sense of lord of the soil, "assiduus;" and lastly, in its derivative form of *Ârya*, became the name of honour in which the Brahmanic Indians delighted as early as the times of the Veda. This climax of meaning may seem peculiar, and peculiar it may perhaps be called if we remember that "peculiaris" is derived from "peculium" and "pecus," chattel and cattle, and that therefore it means what is proper, right, though it be strange to others. Now it

* See Pân. iii. 1, 103.

is a well-known fact, — well known, at least, since Wilhelm von Humboldt explained and proved it,—that language is the outward expression of what he calls the spirit or individuality of a nation. Starting from this point of view, and resting on the principles which Humboldt established, I propose to divide languages, according to the same principles on which we divide the different forms of political societies, into three general classes, into "*Family*," "*Nomad*," and "*State*" languages. These three divisions correspond very nearly with Humboldt's morphological classification, as formularised by Pott, where we find the three classes of "*isolating*," "*agglutinative*," and "*inflectional*" languages. Pott adds a fourth class, which he calls *transnormal* or *incorporative*, i. e. the polysynthetic American dialects. Humboldt adds an intermediate class between the monosyllabic and agglutinative. But there really exists no language which is entirely monosyllabic, or entirely agglutinative, or entirely inflectional. In most languages, traces can still be discovered which show that every one of these three formative principles has at one time been at work in it, although the general character is sufficiently fixed by the preponderating influence of the one or the other. Humboldt, however, considers these three classes as perfectly distinct, and denies, or at least does not venture to assert, the possibility of historical transition between them. He establishes in an earlier work the following four principles.*

"I. Language expresses originally objects only, and leaves the understanding to supply the connecting form. Language endeavours to facilitate this supplementary act by the position of words and by expressions which, though originally indicative of objects and things, may be understood as referring to relation and form. Thus, in the lowest stage, grammatical articulation is represented by phrases and sentences.

II. These expedients are reduced to a certain regularity; the position of words becomes fixed; the words in question lose their independent character, their material sense, often their original sound. Thus, in the second stage, grammatical articulation is

* Über das Entstehen der grammatischen Formen und ihren Einfluss auf die Ideenentwickelung: 1822.

conveyed by fixed construction, and by words whose meaning is half material, half formal.

III. The position of words becomes uniform; formal words are brought in contact with material words, and become affixes. Their connexion, however, is not yet inseparable: the sutures are visible; the whole is an aggregate, but not yet an unity. Thus, grammatical articulation in the third stage is conveyed by what is analogous to form, but not yet formal.

IV. Formal elements at last prevail. The word becomes one, modified only by a change of inflectional sound, according to its grammatical position. Every word belongs to a category, and has not only a lexicological, but also a grammatical individuality. Words expressive of form have no disturbing secondary meaning, but are pure expressions of relationship. Thus, in the highest stage grammatical articulation is conveyed by true form, by inflection, by purely grammatical words."

Third Section.

Mutual Relation of the three Forms of Language, progressive and retrogressive.

HUMBOLDT, BUNSEN.

After this lucid statement of the gradual growth of grammatical forms, it is extraordinary that Humboldt should still have doubted a possible historical transition between the different forms. Professor Boehtlingk's words on this point deserve to be quoted together with Humboldt's. "It is inconceivable," he writes, "how, with such a view on the origin of inflection, any one can doubt for a moment about the possibility of two such languages as Chinese and Sanskrit having the same origin. I say the possibility, not the historical reality, because all attempts at *proving* such a common origin ought from the very beginning to be stigmatised as vain, futile, and therefore unprofessional."

With the exception of the last clause, this expresses exactly the point at issue between Humboldt's view and your own convic-

tion on the historical scale of languages enforced in your lecture delivered at Oxford in 1847. Pott also, as Boehtlingk remarks, is on your side, and expressed his opinion in 1836 in the following words: "It is certainly conceivable that the formation of the Sanskrit language, as it is handed down to us, may have been preceded by a state of the greatest simplicity and entire absence of inflections, such as is exhibited up to the present day by the Chinese and other monosyllabic languages."

I should say, that, in the same manner as in every body-politic, traces of a former nomadic or even family life can be discovered, we may really discover in all Arian languages traces of a Turanian and Chinese formation through which they had passed. Nay, during periods of anarchy, conquest, and migration, political languages seem to relapse into nomadic unsettledness, and during periods of apathy and stagnation nomadic languages may fall back into a state of Chinese helplessness. But what interests us here is the ascending scale, the primary growth of languages, not their secondary formations and reformations.

§ 1. *Character of Family Languages. Chinese.*

In a family, though at first it only lives in and for itself, occasional starts of nomadic dispersion must naturally take place; and history again shows us occasionally, in nomadic tribes, incipient traces of a political concentration. The same is the case in language. In Chinese, though it may properly be called the most perfect type of a family language, we see that the expediency of agglutinative forms began to be felt. This is most palpable in the spoken dialects of China, and in other languages, commonly called monosyllabic. In the Shanghai dialect, *wo* is to speak, as a verb; *wo-da*, a word. *Woda* would be the nominative, *wodaka* the genitive, *pela woda* the dative, *tang woda* the ablative.* The characteristic feature, however, which is impressed on the face of the old Chinese language, is just what we may observe among ourselves in the conversation of friends accustomed to speak together on familiar subjects. It is a style

* The Gospel of St. John in the Chinese Language according to the Dialect of Shanghai, by Professor J. Summers, 1853.

of thought and speech, not unusual even now between husband and wife, between mother and daughter. The one generally knows beforehand what the other is going to say, and words are used more to indicate than to describe thought. Long sentences are hardly thought of, because misapprehensions are not possible, and particular intonations, familiar accents, are sufficient to prepare the mind of the hearer for what he has to expect. These intonations even have been fixed and preserved in Chinese, though originally they may have been nothing else than what we may observe in our own parlance, when, for instance, in dictating to a writer, we tell him "Right," or "Write." Sometimes, however, the Chinese, particularly the old Chinese, approaches to a style of speech such as only a solitary thinker could frame in his conversations with himself; a kind of algebraic chain, intelligible to the initiated but not to others. It has been truly said, therefore, that, as a language, Chinese is admirably fitted for meditation and reflection. It is a language of Brahmanic Munis, but unfit for the forum; and, though it would convey a false idea to characterise the Chinese as a "parler enfantin," it may truly be compared to the short-hand conversation of a small and rather monosyllabic family.

§ 2. *Character of Nomad Languages.*

The Turanian language goes a step beyond this. It expresses in words, not only ideas, but the relation of ideas. The Turanian life is no longer a family life, or the life of a troglodyte Muni. It is the life of tribes, where the individual and the family are separated only by the floating walls of tents, and in daily intercourse with their clansmen. It is an indispensable requirement in every nomadic language, that it should be intelligible to many, though their intercourse be but scanty. The introduction, therefore, of elements expressing as clearly as possible the grammatical relation of words, the invention of signs, whether natural or conventional, for distinguishing between nominal and verbal roots, the avoidance of everything that might obscure the meaning of words or the intention of their grammatical exponents, distinguishes the Turanian from the Chinese.

§ 3. *Character of State Languages.*

The difference between the Turanian and the Arian, between the nomadic and the political languages, is not less characteristic. In the Turanian dialects, as long as they remain purely nomadic, the suffixes, whether in themselves intelligible or not, are felt as modifying elements, and as distinct from the words to which they are attached or "glued." In the Arian languages, the modifications of sense produced by prefixes and suffixes are perceived; but the suffixes themselves are no longer felt as the sole cause of these modifications. The difference is the same as between a compositor and a reader. The compositor puts the *s* to the end of a word and looks on the type *s* in his hand as producing the change of pound into pounds. To the reader the *s* has no separate existence (except on scientific reflection); the whole word expresses to him the modified idea, and in his perception the same change is produced by "penny" and "pence" as by "pound" and "pounds."

It is a mistake to imagine that it is a distinguishing mark of the Turanian languages to express the relations of grammar by independent words. Most of the Turanian suffixes must originally have been independent words; but the same applies to the Arian and the modern Chinese languages, and, as far as etymological science is concerned, more of the Arian than of the Turanian suffixes have as yet been traced back to their original form and independent meaning. Humboldt admits this, and he says that even in Burmese, which is half-brother to Chinese, the case terminations can but rarely be traced back to their original meaning. The sign of the plural "to," for instance, can be explained only if, disregarding the accent, we derive it from "tô," to increase, to add. Professor Boethlingk has established the same by abundant evidence.

Fourth Section.

General Features of Nomad or Turanian Languages.

§ 1. *Integrity of Roots.*

There has been an instinctive feeling in the Turanian nations, which led them to preserve their roots unchanged, although they

allowed them to be surrounded by a large number of prefixes and affixes. The radical and significative portion of their words always stands out in distinct relief, like a living nucleus, and it is never obscured or absorbed, as frequently in the Arian languages. *Age*, in French, for instance, is *eage* and *edage* in Old French; *edage* is a corruption corresponding to a Latin *ætatieum; ætaticum* is a derivation of *ætas*, *ætas* an abbreviation of *ævitas*, and in *ævum* *æ* only is the radical portion, containing the germ from which all the other words derive their life and meaning. What trace of *æ* (*αἰει, αἰ-ων*, Sk. âyus) is there left in *age?* Turanian languages cannot afford to retain such words as *age* in their living dictionaries; and perhaps, from a linguistic point of view, such words can hardly be considered as an ornament to any language. In the few cases where Turanian civilization has reached the point at which the language of the race becomes the object of philosophical and historical research, in the few cases where we meet with Turanian grammarians, Turanians giving their own thoughts on the peculiarities of their own language, the distinctness of the radical elements in every word is generally pointed out by them as a feature which they consider essential to all language, and for the absence of which, in the Arian dialects, they find it difficult to account. The Bask, which is in this respect the very type and perfection of a Turanian language, has produced several grammarians; and one of them, Darrigol, dwells very strongly on this point. He says (p. 18.):

"Comme c'est un vice dans le langage que les syllabes radicales, sans le concours des inflexions accidentelles, soient souvent impuissantes pour faire un sens même générique; ce serait aussi une autre extrémité vicieuse, qu'un mot primitif, par là même qu'il aurait un sens, fût nécessairement déterminé à un sens spécifique, adjectif, substantif, adverbial, &c. La monosyllable *az*, par exemple, répond à peu près à l'infinitif *nourrir;* je dis à peu près, parce que le sens qu'elle présente est encore plus vaste et plus indéfinie que celui de l'infinitif français. La monosyllable *az* est une radicale sur laquelle nous établissons naturellement:

az-te (*nourrir*),	az-cor (*nourrissant*),
az-le (*nourricier*),	az-curri (*nourriture*),
az-cai (*nourrisson*),	az-i (*nourri*), &c."

In Turkish, also, the root is never obscured, though surrounded by a luxuriant growth of conjugational derivatives. We have

sev-mek, *to love*,
sev-me-mek, *not to love*,
sev-e-me-mek, *not to be able to love*,
sev-dir-mek, *to make love* (causative),
sev-dir-me-mek, *not to make love*,
sev-dir-e-me-mek, *not to be able to make love*,
sev-dir-ish-mek, *to make one love one another*,
sev-dir-ish-me-mek, *not to make one love one another*,
sev-dir-ish-e-me-mek, *not to be able to make one love one another*.

In all these forms the radical element "*sev*" is distinct and prominent, and so it is in all Turanian languages; while in Semitic, and still more in Arian formations, the root may be affected and changed to such an extent that even an experienced scholar has difficulty in disentangling it.

§ 2. *Formative Syllables felt as distinctive Elements.*

It is not necessary for the purposes of Turanian grammar, that the suffixes should retain their etymological signification; but it is essential that they should be felt as distinct from the word to which they are appended. It requires tradition, society, and literature to keep up forms which can no longer be analyzed, and in which the formal elements cannot at once be separated from the base. The Arian verb, for instance, contains many forms where the personal pronoun is no longer felt distinctly. Still tradition, custom, and law keep up the understanding of these veteran words, and make us feel unwilling to part with them. This would be incompatible with the ever-shifting state of a nomadic society and language. No debased coin can there be tolerated, no obscure legend accepted on trust: the metal must be pure, and the legend distinct; that the one may be weighed, and the other, if not deciphered, at least recognized as a well-known guarantee. A Turanian might tolerate the Sanskrit:

as-mi,	a-si,	as-ti,	's-mas,	's-tha,	's-anti,
I am,	thou art,	he is,	we are,	you are,	they are

or even the Latin :

's-um,	e-s,	es-t,	'su-mus,	es-tis,	'sunt.

In these instances, with a few exceptions, root and suffix are as distinguishable as, for instance, in the Tsheremissian :

ol-am, ol-at, ol-es, ol-na, ol-da, ol-at.

Nay, the identity of sound in two such forms as *ol-at*, thou art, and *ol-at*, they are, shows the Tsheremissian at a disadvantage if compared with Sanskrit. But a conjugation like the Hindi,

hun, hai, hai, hain, ho, hain,

would not be compatible with the genius of the Turanian languages, because it would not answer the requirements of a nomadic life. Turanian dialects exhibit either no terminational distinctions at all, as in Mandshu ; or a complete and intelligible system of affixes, as in the spoken dialect of Nyertshinsk. But a state of conjugation in which the suffix of the first person singular and plural and of the third person plural are the same, where there is no distinction between the second and third person singular, and between the first and third person plural, would necessarily lead to the adoption of new and more expressive forms in a Turanian dialect. New pronouns would have to be used as suffixes, or some other expedient to be resorted to for the same purpose. In the Arian family this confusion of distinctive terminations is most general in, but by no means confined to, the youngest members. In English it is only the second person singular, a form hardly ever used, which has retained its characteristic termination in the imperfect. But even in Anglo-Saxon, instead of the Gothic plural *bindam, bindith, bindand*, ligamus, ligatis, ligant, we find the second person *bindad* used equally for the first and third. And in the passive we see the Gothic also equalize the first and third person singular, and the three persons plural,—a proceeding unknown, or at least very rare, in any real Turanian dialect.

§ 3. *Facility in producing new Forms.*

Hence we may understand how the Turanian languages continue to retain their creative power of producing new grammatical forms. A Turanian, to a certain extent, holds himself responsible for his grammar. Though he does not spontaneously create every grammatical form as he is using it, still he participates to a certain extent in its formation, inasmuch as he not only forms his words into a sentence, but also his roots and suffixes into words. A language containing this grammatical consciousness may live and grow, and may produce analogous forms, after discarding forms which had become corrupt, dead, and unintelligible.

Castrén, in his dissertation "De Affixis Personalibus" (page 13.), bears witness to the fact that, while the literary language of the Mongolians has no pronominal affixes, whether subjective or predicative, this characteristic feature of the Turanian family has but lately broken out in the spoken dialect of the Buriates, and in the Tungusic idiom spoken near Nyertshinsk, in Siberia. We must guard here against a mistake. These primary formations of Turanian grammar are different in principle from the secondary or analytical formations in the Arian languages which they resemble. The Turanian appends his terminations again and again to verbal or nominal bases, thus forming new grammatical compounds; while modern Arian dialects retain the corrupt matter of a former organism, and form small sentences by putting explanatory prepositions and pronouns before words worn-out by use.

If we consider that in Turanian grammar the adoption of the pronominal suffixes, subjective and predicative (as it has taken place but lately in some Tungusic and Mongolic dialects), means really the introduction of a new conjugation and the remodelling of the principal part of declension, we must allow that the Arian languages can show nothing similar to this power, not of renovation only, but of regeneration.

§ 4. *Scarcity of irregular Forms.*

While the Arian languages, compared with the Turanian, are weak on this point, they are, on the other side, strong in what no-

madic races possess hardly at all:—irregular and dialectical forms. To keep up such forms in grammar, language requires tradition and different social elements, which the plains of Central Asia and the taciturnity of Mongolian tribes could not furnish. Without an uninterrupted continuity between successive phases of speech, without a mutual intercourse of dialects, nothing irregular can maintain itself in language. Thus, as most Turanian languages are the languages of the day; as they are, so to say, in the power of each generation; as they cannot resist change, cannot preserve what is not continually revived and used, we may understand why they are so extremely regular and monotonous, without any of those strange anomalies which, in the Arian languages, harass the student, but delight the scholar. Professor Boehtlingk's statement fully confirms this view. "In the agglutinative languages," he says *, "we find that one and the same grammatical relation is always expressed in the same manner, making allowance only for purely euphonic changes, which are regulated by very general laws. In the Indo-Germanic languages, one and the same relation is frequently expressed very differently, varying according to the words or whole classes of words to which they refer. It is impossible there to account for the difference of termination by general euphonic laws. In the Ural-Altaic languages, on the contrary, we have *one* declension and *one* conjugation, and only a very small number of irregular forms. In the Indo-Germanic, we meet with several declensions and conjugations, and a mass of irregular forms, which all point to a long-continued life, or at least to a life of intense individuality in grammatical formation."

§ 5. *Rapid Divergence of Dialects.*

Another feature of the Turanian family of languages, intimately connected with the two which have just been pointed out (their power of renovation, and their regularity of formation), is the great variety of grammatical growth to which the members of this family are liable if once split and separated for any length of time. If a nation retains the consciousness of its grammar, if the

* Introduction, p. xxiv.

idea which it connects, for instance, with a plural is only that of a noun followed by a syllable indicative of plurality, it is evident that many forms are possible to realize this idea. In Tibetan the plural may be expressed by thamtche (all), tha-ded (each), koun (many), as in Chinese by tchou, ko, tchoung. (Rémusat, "Lang. Tart.," p. 362.) The same applies to several of the modern languages of India; and in some these plurals of substantives are so clearly felt as compounds, like "animal-mass" or "stone-heap," instead of "animals," "stones," that the verb after them is put in the singular and not in the plural. Nay, even after a suffix expressive of plurality has again been obscured, and can no longer be identified with any collective noun, we may still perceive its original nature by seeing that plurals formed on this principle continue to have the verb in the singular. The same applies to the plural of Greek neuters, which were originally collective nouns, i. e. feminines in the singular. If the ablative is expressed by an additional syllable, expressive of removal, distance, or cause, many syllables would equally answer the purpose. Thus we find in Bengáli, kartrik, hetuk, pûrvak, diyâ, rahit, sange, sati, hoite, &c. all used in the sense of the Latin ablative. However, in one and the same clan during one and the same period, one suffix would most likely become popular and be fixed for certain grammatical categories. Thus, out of a large mass of possible formations, a small number only would become customary and technical, so as in the end to lead to a scheme of declension such as we find in political languages. Different hordes, however, as they became separated would feel themselves at liberty to repeat the same process, and might thus fix in their different idioms different phases of grammatical life, which, if confined to one and the same tribe, would have disappeared without leaving any traces. Thus the power of self-conscious renovation which, as confined to one and the same dialect, had only the effect of discarding old and irregular forms, may, if exercised on diverging dialects, produce such a total difference between idioms most closely related, as to make them appear entirely disconnected.

§ 6. *Contrast between the Progress and Growth of Turanian and Arian Languages.*

If we try to put the life and growth of such languages clearly before us, we shall find that in a nomadic language the sudden rise of a family or of a small association may produce an effect which, in political languages, can only be produced by the ascendancy of a town or a province, a race or a religious sect. The peculiarities of a family may there change the whole surface of a language, and the accent of a successful Khán may leave its stamp on the grammar of his whole tribe. When one of the great Tatar chiefs proceeds on an expedition, he, as Marco Polo tells us in the fourteenth century, puts himself at the head of an army of a hundred thousand horse, and organizes them in the following manner. He appoints an officer to the command of every ten men, and others to command a hundred, a thousand, and ten thousand men respectively. Thus, ten of the officers commanding ten men take their orders from him who commands a hundred; of these, each ten from him who commands a thousand; and each ten of these latter from him who commands ten thousand. By this arrangement each officer has only to attend to the management of ten men, or ten bodies of men, and the word of command is spread from the Khán to the last common soldiers in a hundred thousand, after passing through not more than four mouths. This is characteristic, linguistically as well as politically.

In political languages, a change of grammar is generally preceded by a political revolution, by war of races and conquest. Such changes, whether they happen in the steppes of Tatary or in the capitals of Europe, we are accustomed to call the growth of languages, because we generally look only at the surface of languages and are hardly able to discover the continual undergrowth of individual expressions, family words, cockneyisms, provincialisms, and dialects. But languages really cannot be said to grow in the sense of continually advancing and rising. Grammatical forms have no substantive existence (*οὐσία*). They exist as forms in the speech of nations, and the speech of a nation again has its existence in the speech of individuals. It is, therefore, in the case of phonetic changes only that

we can speak of one word being changed into another; but old forms never grow into new ones. Old leaves fall and new leaves appear. Out of many possible forms and varieties some rise to the surface; while others, which had been classical for a time, are blown away. But the new forms existed long before, and the old forgotten forms may sometimes reappear. When the language of Germany ceased to be Gothic and became High German, it was not because Low German had grown into High German. The people who spoke Gothic had passed away from the literary or political stage of Germany; few only lingered behind: large masses of Franks pressed on, and soon the language of the church, of the court, and of the poet was High German and no longer Gothic. But High German existed long before; just as Italian existed long before Dante, and Italianizing forms may be discovered as vulgarisms as early as the time of Cato.

There are two changes in grammar which must be distinguished. The one is produced suddenly by conquest or migration, and we may call it a *dislocation of language*. Thus Gothic was dislocated by High German; and the effects are clearly visible not only in grammar, but also in the regular dislocation (verschiebung) of the phonetical system. The other change is wrought without any violent concussion; as it were, by the wear and tear of a language in its own working. A number of possible analogous forms rise slowly and imperceptibly into existence and use; individual words or modes of expression become popular and general, and dialects intermix and exchange. This may be called a *secondary formation* in language. Frequently a dislocation of language brings out more manifestly the accumulated effects of a previous process of secondary formation; because, if the higher ranks of society are broken and literary occupations for a time discontinued, the spoken language has an opportunity for throwing off the fetters of literary usage, and legitimizes at once its numerous natural offspring. Arian languages, particularly in modern times, change principally by the former, Turanian by the latter process.

Fifth Section.

On the Principles of Formation and Derivation in the Turanian Languages.

We have hitherto considered the nomadic state of language in its general effects on grammar. It is necessary now to consider how the same nomadic spirit would act more particularly on the formation of grammatical categories and the derivation of words.

§ 1. *Scarcity of Synonymes and Homonymes.*

As most words are originally appellatives or predicates expressive of distinguishing qualities, one object was capable of many names in the ancient languages. In the course of time, however, the greater portion of these synonymes became unintelligible and useless, and they were mostly replaced by one fixed name which might be called the proper name of such objects. The more ancient a language, the richer it is in synonymes. Synonymes, again, if used constantly, naturally give rise to a number of homonymes. If we may call the sun by fifty different names expressive of different qualities, it is clear that some of these names will be applicable to other objects also which happen to possess the same qualities. These different objects would then be called by one and the same name; they would become homonymes. It is clear that this luxuriant growth of poetical appellatives must lead to confusion; and it is only in small and compact communities, and by the help of national poetry, epic or sacred, that synonymes and homonymes can be kept up for any length of time. They do exist in the ancient Arian languages, and form a peculiar charm in their poetry; but even there, even in political languages, they become more and more embarrassing. In the Veda the earth is called "Urvî" (wide), "Prithvî" (broad), "Mahî" (great), and many more names, of which the Nighantu mentions twenty-one. These twenty-one words would be synonymes. But Urvî, again, is not only a name of the earth, but it also means a river. Prithvî or prithivî means not only earth, but sky and dawn. Mahî is used for speech and cow, as well as for earth. Therefore earth, river, sky, dawn, speech, and cow

would become homonymes. To the genius of nomadic languages the continuance of such words is utterly repugnant. Most of these old terms, thrown out by language at the first burst of youthful poetry, are based on bold metaphors. These metaphors once forgotten, or the meaning of roots from which the words were derived once dimmed and changed, the words themselves become insignificant. This would not matter so much in Arian languages, where people soon learn to look upon nouns as symbolic signs, without much reference to their etymological meaning. But in the Turanian languages, properly so called, the number of nouns belonging to this class must always be comparatively small.

§ 2. *Adjectives, Substantives, and Verbs not always distinct.*

In the Turanian languages many words are still uncertain between substantives, adjectives, and verbs; that is to say, *their radical meaning is still so free and general* that they can be used as subjects and as predicates, and, therefore, as nouns, adjectives, and verbs. Thus we read in Boehtlingk's Yakute Grammar (§ 238.): "The substantive is not treated as separate from the adjective, because they are frequently the same." If the adjective takes the terminations of declension, it becomes a substantive; as adjective it has no grammatical suffix, but is put before the substantive, as in a Sanskrit compound. For instance, Hungarian *A' szep virágok*, the beautiful flowers. Here the plural termination (*k*) is put to the substantive only. But *A' késeк életlenek*, the knives are blunt. Here the plural is expressed both after the substantive and the predicate. We may compare such phrases as "our knives" and "the knives are ours;" but they are different in origin. The same process which in the Turanian languages raises an adjective to a substantive, may also transform it into a verb. In Hungarian, according to Reváy, *fagy* signifies both "frost" and "it freezes." *Lak* (now only used in composition) meant "habitation;" and if followed by a pronoun, it becomes a verb, *lak-ik*, habitat. "In the infancy of language," to quote Reváy's explanation of these forms, "the forms *fagy-en*, *fagy-te*, *fagy-ö*, arose from the inartificial annexation of the pronoun, the radical having both the force of the noun and of the verb, when

predicated of persons: primarily denoting *gelu* ego, tu, ille, instead of *gelu* meum, tuum, suum, and then *gelasco, gelascis, gelascit.* Afterwards, by a more perfect formation which is still in use, a distinction was made between them in this way; namely, that *fagy-om, fagy-od, fagy-a* or *ja*, my cold, thy cold, his cold, *lak-om, lak-od, lak-ja*, my place, thy place, his place, were employed as nouns, and *fagy-ok, fagy-oz, fagy*, I freeze, thou freezest, he freezes, *lak-om, lak-ol, lak-ik*, I dwell, thou dwellest, he dwells, as verbs." The insufficiency of this explanation has been pointed out by Garnett, and we shall have to examine it hereafter; but still Revây's observations are valuable. In Yakutic, "frozen" is *ton;* but followed by subjective suffixes, it also means "to freeze." *Tin*, in the same dialect, means breath; but followed by verbal terminations, it becomes a verb, to breathe. Substantives even which have lost their appellative nature, and are real nouns, are verbalized by the mere addition of these subjective suffixes. "Agha" in Yakute means father; the same word is raised to a verb, "I am father," by simply appending the subjective pronouns, without any intermediate verbal derivative. "Min agha-bĭn," means I am father; "än agha-ghin," thou art father; "kini agha," he (is) father. In the same manner the root sanâ, which as a root may mean thinking, thought, or thinker, is conjugated sanî-bin, I think, sanî-gĭn, thou thinkest, &c. The only difference here consists in the final vowel of the base. Even inflected bases are carried along by the powerful current of verbal formations in these dialects. For instance, "jiä," in Yakute, means house; "jiäghä," in the house; hence "kinilär jiäghälär," they are at home (Yakute Grammar, § 419.). In Mandshu, the number of words which have no distinctive termination is considerable, and the same bases may be used there as nouns, verbs, adverbs, and even as particles (Gabelentz, p. 19.). In Chinese, owing to the absence of all derivative elements, the identity of verbal and nominal bases is absolute. Not so, however, in the modern Chinese dialects. In the Shanghai dialect the use of a noun to express the verbal idea, and vice versâ, is rather an exception than a rule. A noun is not transformed into a verb without its proper change of form by suffix, not merely by change of tone, as in the general language of the country. And in like manner the verb does not take the form of the verbal noun, ex-

cept by the addition of a formative particle.* The Bhota and Bhotánta languages have certain distinctive particles for nouns and verbs; yet many words are still nominal as well as verbal. In Burmese, *nê* means to remain, to last, and the sun; *mai*, to be dark, to threaten, and the indigo plant. Humboldt, when speaking of these Burmese roots, says (p. 345.): "They are really Chinese roots, but they show unmistakably an approaching similarity to Sanskrit roots. Frequently these so-called roots have without any change, a nominal meaning, but their verbal meaning shines through more or less distinctly." This similarity with Sanskrit roots may seem a bold assertion; but traces of the same indeterminate character of bases, nominal and verbal, can really be discovered in Sanskrit, though, of course, on a limited scale. Vâk, in Sanskrit, if followed by the case terminations, means speech; genitive, vâk-as; dat., vâk-i; abl., vâk-shu. Vak, if followed by subjective suffixes, becomes a verb and means to speak; vak-mi, vak-shi, vak-ti, I speak, thou speakest, he speaks. In composition the same word vâk is used almost like an adjective. For instance, kalaha, disturbance; vâk-kalaha, quarrel. The difference between verbal and nominal bases is marked here only by the quantity of the radical vowel. In Latin also the same observation may still be made with regard to voc-s, voc-is, on one side, and voc-o, voc-a-s, voc-a-t, on the other; only that in voc-a-s and voc-a-t the intermediate *a* indicates the verbal nature of the compound, and thus distinguishes noun and verb.

§ 3. *Pronominal Affixes, subjective and predicative.*

Now, it should be observed that, in the Arian languages, where, with few exceptions, the distinction between nominal and verbal bases is drawn most carefully, there was really much less necessity for it, because these languages never employ possessive or predicative suffixes after nominal bases. A base, therefore, if followed by a pronoun, would at once be recognized as a predicate in these languages, and no ambiguity could ever arise, even if the base by itself might mean "speech," "speaker," and "to speak." The compound, i. e. the base,

* Cf. J. Summers's Translation of St. John, p. vi.

together with the pronoun, would always mean "I speak," and never "my speech." Every base followed by a personal pronoun in the Arian languages is verbal. An ambiguity arises, however, in the Turanian and Semitic languages. Here two sets of pronominal suffixes are used; the one subjective, added to verbs, the other predicative or possessive, added to nouns. I call *subjective* the pronominal suffixes which Castrén calls predicative, and *predicative* those which he calls possessive. The reason for this change of terminology is obvious. A pronoun, if appended to a noun substantive or used as a possessive suffix, is always predicative. This applies to every language without exception. In the Egyptian *si-f*, his son, *si*, son, is the subject, *f* is the predicate. But if a pronoun is attached to a base really verbal, or if it is used as what is commonly, but erroneously, called a predicative suffix, the pronoun is always the subject, and the verbal base is the predicate. In the Egyptian *iri-ef*, he does, *ef*, he, is the subject, which is qualified by *iri*, doing. We may change the verb, and the subject remains the same; but the subject shifts as soon as we change the pronoun.

The Semitic languages also employ their pronominal affixes to mark the persons of the verb: I love, thou lovest, he loves; and to express the persons of the noun: my house, thy house, his house. The one and the other class of pronominal affixes are attached to the end of words, and in some cases they differ but slightly, or not at all, as in the third person feminine of the singular, which is "âh" both after nouns and verbs.

The Arian languages, on the contrary, have never possessed more than one set of pronominal affixes, and these are used to mark the persons of the verb. Instead of predicative affixes, they use their genitives, μοῦ, σοῦ, or independent possessive adjectives, μός, σός. Compounds such as Egyptian si-k, son-thou, i. e. son of thee, thy son; or Hebrew, lebush-kâ, dress (of) thee; or Hungarian atya-m, atya-d, atya, my, thy, his father, are impossible, nay inconceivable, to an Arian mind. If a compound is to be formed wherein the pronoun is the predicate, the Arian mind is forced to put the pronoun first, and thus we find, indeed, in Sanskrit, but in no other Arian dialect, predicative pronominal *prefixes*, such as, mat-putra, tvat-putra, tat-putra, my, thy, his son; but never predicative *affixes*.

There is one solitary exception to this general rule, which deserves to be pointed out, the Persian. The Persian is the only instance of an Arian language where in all compounds the predicate can be put first. We say in Persian "puser-i-dost," the son of the friend, which, if expressed as a compound in any other Arian dialect, would have to be expressed by "dost-i-puser." The only way to account for this direct violation of the genius of the Arian grammar in Persian is to ascribe it to the influence which the Semitic language and literature exercised on the inhabitants of Persia from the time of Cyrus up to that of Firdusi. If the Persian could once break his mind into the Semitic fashion of placing the subject in a compound first and the predicate last, it was but another step in this direction to do the same where the predicate is a pronoun, and thus we find in Persian a set of predicative affixes attached to nouns in the same manner as in Semitic languages. We say in Persian, not only dil-i-keniz, the heart of the maid, but

dil-i-men, my heart,
dil-i-tu, thy heart,
dil-i-o, his heart.

Here "men," "tu," "o," are the regular personal pronouns. These, however, may be abbreviated again, and in some instances be replaced by distinct pronominal affixes, so as to give

dil-em, my heart,
dil-et, thy heart,
dil-esh, his heart.

Another instance where predicative pronominal affixes seem to occur in an Arian dialect, is an exception only in appearance, for it would be wrong to compare these really anomalous forms with expressions such as we find in the secondary formations of the Arian languages: I mean the Italian "fratelmo," my brother, "patremo," my father. Though "fratelmo" may seem a compound hardly differing in principle from the Persian "dilimen," my heart, it is necessary to observe that "fratelmo" is only an abbreviation and corruption of "fratellus meus," or rather of "fratellum meum." Now it is clear that, as soon as two words have once been articulated by indicatory terminations

such as "us," the speaker is at full liberty to place the predicate either before or after the subject. Even if the pronoun is not yet an adjective, agreeing in gender, number, and case with its subject, but is distinguished only by the termination of the genitive, all restrictions which were felt with regard to the collocation of words in compounds, will naturally disappear. Let us only consider what is meant by what we call a genitive, and we shall see that a language which expresses the genitive at all is as free with regard to its collocation as it is with adjectives.

The genitive in most languages is an adjective, only as yet without terminations to mark case and gender. But the adjective again is generally a derivative where, by means of a pronominal affix, the quality, action, &c. expressed by a noun is grafted on a pronominal subject. In Sanskrit, "dakshin*â*" means the south; and if we add to it the pronominal base "tya" (syas, syâ, tyad), we get "dakshin*â*-tyas," he from, of, or in the south, i. e. southern. Πόλις in Greek means city; and if we add to it the same pronominal derivative, we get πολίτης, "urbanus," "civis." Sometimes this pronominal derivative is only a short a; as Sk. manas, mind, mânas-as, what belongs to the mind, Greek πίστις, trust, πίστι-ος, trusty. The difference between a genitive and an adjective can best be shown in Sanskrit. In Sanskrit the neuter sáhas, strength, forms the genitive sáhasas. This genitive is the most general predicate, and its termination remains the same, whether the subject to which it refers be in the singular or plural, masculine or feminine, nominative or accusative. We may say "sáhasas patis," the lord of power, and "sáhasas patim," the lord of power (accus.), the genitive only expressing sáhas, power, as a predicate of something. But if we express in sáhas-as, not only the predicate, but gender, number, and case, the genitive becomes changed into an adjective; and instead of saying "sáhasas patim," the lord of strength (accus.), we now say "sahasám patim," the lord powerful, both words being in the accusative. The regular genitive of words like πίστις would be πίστι-ος (instead of πίστεως); and if we make this genitive express gender and case, we get πίστιος, ια, ιον. The usual Sanskrit genitive in "sya" is probably but another form of the pronominal base "tya," which we had in dakshin*â*-tya, only that the former cannot be raised to an

adjective, while the latter takes the exponents of gender and case. What we express is nearly the same, whether we say a bird of the water, or an aquatic bird. The adjective aquatic we should express in Sanskrit by âp (water) + tya (âptyas, â, am); the genitive, by udaka, water, + sya, "udakasya," of the water. Both forms, genitive as well as adjective, mean originally and etymologically "water-there," and "water-there-he, she, it," taking the local adverb "there," as the nearest approach to the radical meaning of the demonstrative pronoun. Here, then, we clearly see the contrast between Semitic and Arian grammar. In Hebrew we can say first, as it were by one act of intuition, malk-i-zedek, king-justice. In Sanskrit we say dharma-râ*g*a, justice-king. Secondly, we can turn it into a phrase and say in Hebrew, ben o Beor, the son-he Beor, i. e. the son of Beor; or still more clearly in Ethiopic, anqaz enta samây, "porta ea cœli," anqaz being feminine, and "enta" being the feminine pronoun. In Sanskrit, on the contrary, we add the pronoun to the predicate, and say râ*g*â dharma-sya, "the king justice-there," i. e. the king of justice; or we actually form an adjective (and every genitive in Mahratti, for instance, is an adjective distinguishing gender and case), and say "rex justus," or "regina justa." If a language has once formed genitives and adjectives, it is no longer under the restraint of what we might call the national logic differing thus in the Semitic and the Arian race. Without grammatical exponents the Hindu can only say "râ*g*a-putras," king-son, or "tvat-putras," thy son. But as soon as we form the genitive, we may say "tava putras," or "putras tava;" and with the adjective, tâvakas putras or putras tâvakas, or, in Latin, frater meus and meus frater. Phonetic corruption may afterwards reduce the adjective to the state where instead of "meus, mea, meum," for instance, we have only "mo" for all cases and genders. Still "mo," in fratelmo, occupies its place only as a degenerate descendant of "meus." It follows the subject as a pronominal adjective, but it does not enter as a predicative pronoun into composition with a substantive, like the Persian dil-em, my heart.

What has been said with regard to fratelmo applies with equal force to such compounds as "Hôtel-Dieu." They may be used to illustrate the Semitic mode of thinking; but grammatically "Dieu,"

in "Hôtel-Dieu," is the Romance genitive or casus obliquus, and only as such could it remain in a few expressions without requiring the new sign of the genitive, de. In the Oath of Strassburg we have "pro deo amur," "deo" being the casus obliquus, while in the same document the nominative is "deus."*

With the exception of Persian, therefore, and after the discovery of the cuneiform inscriptions, we may say, with the exception of modern Persian, no Arian language employs personal pronominal affixes except after verbs.

§ 4. *Means of distinguishing nominal and verbal Bases in Turanian Languages.*

To avoid the confusion, which would naturally arise if roots can be used nominally and verbally, and if pronouns can be attached to them as subjects and as predicates, languages have at a very early period resorted to various expedients. Instances occur where languages really do not distinguish between *asinus ego* and *asinus mei.* For instance, when the definite conjugation is employed in Hungarian, *ir-om* may mean *unguentum mei*, or *scribo; lep-em, tegimen mei* or *tego.* In modern Hungarian, *esö* denotes *pluvia*, and *es-ik, pluit;* but in the fifteenth century the simple root *es* was employed in both senses. There can be little doubt, as Garnett remarks, that at an early period this identity of the verbal root with the noun was a general law of the language. At present the abstract noun in Hungarian commonly differs from the simplest form of the verb by the addition of a syllable, usually *as* or *at:* e. gr. *ir*, scribit; *iras*, scriptio; *ir-at*, scriptum. In languages without a formal distinction between nominal and verbal roots, care has generally been taken not to use a root, once sanctioned as nominal, for verbal purposes. Thus it happens that a root is sometimes used in one dialect for verbal, in another for nominal purposes only, but not for both in one and the same dialect. (See Yakute Grammar, § 236. note 71.) The pronominal suffixes might by themselves have served as a guarantee against a confusion of nouns and verbs, if their subjective and predicative forms had been kept sufficiently distinct, because, as a general rule, bases followed

* Diez, Altromanische Sprachdenkmale, 1846.

by predicative suffixes would be nominal; if followed by subjective suffixes, verbal. But to do this was almost impossible, from the very nature of the pronominal suffixes. In some languages they are identically the same, whether used as subjects or as predicates, or, as we should say, as nominatives or as genitives. In the Tungusic class, no distinction exists, so far as the pronominal affixes are concerned, between *pay of me*, i. e. *my pay*, and *pay I*, i. e. *I pay*. But again, even where there is a formal difference between these two sets of pronominal suffixes, this difference could never be very considerable, because both, after all, must be derived from the same pronouns; the subjectives mostly from the nominative, the predicatives from an oblique case.

Languages, therefore, as soon as they began to care at all for logical distinctness, were obliged to put a stop to the promiscuous use of nominal and verbal bases. They were driven to distinguish in every root the verbal from the nominal pole by some mark more distinct than what was furnished by the slight variations of pronominal suffixes. In the Turanian family the Yakute language makes a most favourable exception, for in it final letters are in most cases sufficient to mark the verbal or nominal character of a base. In Turkish we can only distinguish by accent between "güzelim," my handsome one, and "güzelim," I am handsome.

§ 5. *Means of distinguishing nominal and verbal Bases in Arian Languages.*

In the Arian languages, although none but subjective suffixes were used, it was felt expedient to distinguish a verbal from a nominal base. The most primitive tenses in Sanskrit are the perfect and the aorist. They are formed from the root not burdened as yet by any Vikara*n*as, i. e. distinguishing verbal marks. The perfect in Sanskrit was originally a present; it became the perfect, in our sense of the word, only after the introduction of a new special form of the present. Every Sanskrit root, in order to be used for verbal purposes, was originally raised to a perfect; that is to say, its initial letter was reduplicated. This is as clear in Greek as in Sanskrit, and the number of perfects not restricted as yet to a past tense is considerable in both languages. In Sanskrit we have a root *tan*, to stretch. If employed for verbal

formations, this root was originally reduplicated and became *tatan*. To this verbal base subjective pronouns were attached, thus giving *tatân-a, tatan-tha, tatân-a*, I stretch, thou stretchest, he stretches, restricted as yet in time neither to the present nor to the past. In Greek, if we take the root MNA, *to remember*, we see that, in order to adapt it for verbal employment, it has to be reduplicated first, after which subjective pronominal suffixes are added, and the new compound *μέμνη-μαι* takes the sense of *I remember*.

But although this process of producing verbal bases as distinct from nominal bases was probably one of the most ancient, it was by no means the only one employed, in the Arian languages. Every one of the numerous Vikara*n*as in Sanskrit, Greek, and Latin is really a derivative element (a verbal Un*â*di, as P*â*nini might call it) put aside for verbal purposes. If we add to the root tan, in Sanskrit, the Vikara*n*a of the eighth class, we get tan-u, which again, followed by subjective pronouns, gives us tano-mi, tano-shi, tano-ti, or tan-e, tanu-she, tanu-te, in the sense of I stretch, thou stretchest, he stretches. The same in Greek, where from the root TAN we get not only *τανύω*, but, by other Vikara*n*as, *τείνω* (i. e. *τενιω*), *τιταίνω*, &c. These Greek Vikara*n*as have been exhibited in a most lucid arrangement by Geo. Curtius. ("Bildung der Tempora und Modi, 1846.") It was owing to the introduction of these new bases, such as for instance *τύπ-τ-ω* instead of *τέτυφα* (*i. e. τε-τυπ-ά*), that the old reduplicated forms took the sense of perfects. It was the absence in them of all distinguishing marks which excluded the old reduplicated forms from the present *κατεξοχήν*, while most of the Vikara*n*as, expressing either inchoative activity, or participal quality, or motion, or continuity, were eminently fitted for expressing an action actually present.

Without entering as yet into the formation of the real preterite of the Arian languages, — I mean what is called the second aorist in Greek, and the multiform preterite in Sanskrit, — it would be of interest to see how other languages gained the same point, — that of forming the first verbal base—which the Arian accomplished by reduplication of the initial letter. In Chinese, we have no right to expect anything of this kind; but in the Turanian family, the Yakut has already been mentioned with distinction, in so far as it fixed some

and discountenanced other vowels at the end of verbal bases as a means of distinguishing nominal and verbal radicals.

§ 6. *Means of distinguishing nominal and verbal Bases in Semitic Languages.*

In Tibetan, and its cognate languages spoken in the Sub-himalayan districts, many nominal bases become verbal by a mere repetition of the final letter: as *nág*, black, *nág-go*, it is black; *sum*, three, *sum-mó*, it is three. The present definite is always formed by reduplication of the final letter, whether consonant or vowel: as *jyed*, to do, *nga jyed-dó*, I am doing. However distant these dialects may appear from the language of Homer, I am inclined to consider their final reduplication as prompted by the same motive which led the Arians to the reduplication of the initial letter of their roots. The repetition of the whole or part of a root was felt as the most natural expedient to express continuity, activity, or motion; in fact, to express what Aristotle calls the distinctive point between verb and substantive, time.*

If then the Arian languages, though they used pronominal suffixes after verbal bases only, if the Sub-himalayan languages, though they used hardly any pronominal suffixes (excepting only some more advanced member, like the Nága dialects), were driven to invent distinctions between nominal and verbal bases, much more must this want have been felt by the Semitic nations. With the little difference between their subjective and predicative suffixes, measures of a much more general character were necessary, if confusion was to be avoided. Might not, therefore, the extraordinary idea taken up by the Semitic languages evidently at a very early period, — for it is common to all Semitic tribes, — of reducing all verbal bases alike to a triliteral appearance, be accounted for by the same motive? It is against the genius of Shem to reduplicate an initial consonant, and there is no real Semitic root beginning with twice the same letter. But the final letter could be reduplicated, and the verbs ghain-ghain

* See Aristotle, Poetic. c. 20. De Interpr. c. 2. Lersch, Sprach-Philosophie der Alten, ii. p. 13. *Ὄνομα μὲν οὖν φωνὴ σημαντικὴ κατὰ συνθήκην ἄνευ χρόνου. Ῥῆμα δέ ἐστι τὸ προσσημαῖνον χρόνον.* In German the only word for verb is "Zeitwort."

show how frequently it was. I do not say that reduplication was the only means of distinguishing verbal and nominal bases in Hebrew. Other expedients were at hand, as various as the Vikaraṇas of the Arian languages. In the Arian languages these Vikaraṇas are generally put at the end of a root; but nasals, and nasals with vowels, are inserted in the middle of roots, in order to transform them into new verbal bases. Thus yu*g*, to join, becomes yu-na-*g*-mi, I join. The same and many other ways were open to the Semitic dialects. Now it is, I believe, admitted by all Semitic scholars, that the radicals of the Semitic family were originally biliteral; the point on which they differ is only the method by which triliteral roots can be traced back to their more primitive biliteral state. Fürst adopts the rather severe process of simply beheading the triliteral roots; Klaproth adopts the other alternative, and proposes to cut off their tails. The best that can be said on the subject was said by Ewald, in 1827. "It is even possible," he says (Grammar, § 95.), "to reduce the full-grown triliteral bases to shorter radicals, from which all secondary bases were derived, as their meaning became more and more different. For instance, the triliteral roots, qâʒaʒ, qâʒâh, qâʒab, qâʒar, may all have sprung from the short qaʒ, to cut. And here it should be observed, that roots, where only the final letter is reduplicated or where a soft consonant has been added, stand nearer to the primitive radical and are more related to one another than those which are distinguished by the addition of a strong consonant. A comparison of such roots, carried out with ingenuity and caution, would lead to many new results; but it should be remembered that, in etymological researches of this kind, we transcend the limits of the peculiarly Semitic language and grammar."

Now, it is true that, in the present state of Semitic language, all bases, whether verbal or nominal, are alike triliteral, and that therefore it might seem as if the reason assigned above for the creation of triliteral roots were not commensurate to its effect. But while there is not a single biliteral verbal root in actual use among the Semitic tribes, there still exist some biliteral forms; and they belong invariably to old nouns, or to still older pronouns. Some of these nouns are without any verbal analogy or etymology. Others are now derived from verba geminantia, hamzata, quiescentia; but with them,

if there is any real ground for derivation, the opposite process would generally be the more natural. No scholar could seriously think of deriving *âb*, father, from *abah*, voluit; *ben*, son, from *banah*, ædificavit; *kol*, all, from *kalal*, circumdedit. After the Semitic mind had once imbibed the triliteral character of its predicative roots, biliteral roots were eliminated in the most sweeping manner. Even pronominal bases were made triliteral, whether by additional syllables, or by changing mere vowels into semivowels. New substantives could, of course, be formed from verbal roots to any amount; and as these new words were more expressive and intelligible, and could be sufficiently distinguished by peculiar vocalization from the different forms of conjugation, they well nigh supplanted all ancient monosyllabic nouns. Now, there must have been a reason for this thoroughgoing change; and I cannot believe that the first start can be explained simply on phonetic or rhythmical grounds. It is true that peculiar features in a language are sometimes perpetuated which owe their origin to the mere fancies or crotchets of one patriarchal i. e. specific, (*εἰδοποιὸς*) individual. But in the case before us we may observe analogous tendencies in languages not Semitic in their origin; and I venture, therefore, to rest my argument for the original *verbal* character of triliteral roots on these four points:—

I. According to the Semitic system of grammar and orthography, there is now not a single root which is not triliteral.

II. Nouns and pronouns exist which sometimes in writing, and more frequently in pronunciation, are decidedly biliteral.

III. Triliteral nouns are mostly secondary verbal formations, and therefore in many cases not absolutely identical in all Semitic dialects. They mostly differ in different dialects by verbal derivation and vocalisation.

IV. In many cases the character of the additional litera tertia, whether initial, medial, or final, is sufficiently marked by this, that it is either a semi-vowel, or nasal, or sibilant, or a reduplicated letter. It frequently varies in different Semitic dialects, while the two radical letters remain the same. I shall give one instance —one not the less instructive because it has been pointed out many times before, and first, I believe, by Klaproth.* If we

* Principes de l'Étude Comparative des Langues, par le Baron de Merian; suivis

take the usual Hebrew paradigm qâṫal, he strikes, it can easily be proved that the *l*, as a semi-vowel, is here the litera tertia, and must give way. This leaves us qa*ṫ*, which in Hebrew shows itself again in *qeṫ*el, destruction, and with the change of *Têṫ* into Ʒâde, as qâʒâh, qâʒaʒ, qâʒab, qâʒar, &c. In Arabic this root has been most prolific. We get qa*ṫṫa*, qa*ṫ*aba, qa*ṫ*a'ha, qa*ṫ*afa, qa*ṫ*ala, qa*ṫ*ama, qaḍḍa, qadḥḍha, qathṭha, qaʒʒa, qasama, qaʒaba, qaʒada, qaʒara, qaʒama, qaʒmala, qaʒʒa qaʒqaʒa, qaʒaba,—all in the sense of cutting, striking, killing, dividing, breaking, biting, &c. How true it is, as Ewald remarks, that, by following out etymological researches of this kind, we transcend the limits of language, peculiarly Semitic, is shown by this very instance. The Hungarian *kés*, knife, the Mongolic kese, to cut, chasu (tailler), the Turkish *kesmek*, cutting, the Garo kethali, knife, show us that we are on ground common to the Turanian; the Sanskrit *sas*, and Latin cædo, that we are on ground common to the Arian languages. This is by no means a solitary instance where a root, after removing its various increments, or, so to say, divesting it of its national dress, can be reduced to that form in which it may be considered as a radical, common to all human speech. We must not expect to find roots common to Semitic, Arian, and Turanian languages, except those which express the simplest material impressions. But roots like LAK, to lick, MAR, to decay, ZAR, to tear, TAR, to transgress, SAR, to go, TAN, to give, &c., may safely be considered as common property. No doubt they approach, in this abstract form, very near to interjections, or mere phonetic imitations; but still there is a well-marked difference between these roots and interjections. An interjection never grows, but is but the momentary outcry of a material impulse; while a root is the conscious and intentional expression of an impression, remembered and fixed on the human mind. It is owing to this ideal character that a root is capable of entering into the most various processes of assimilation and combination. The root LAK, for instance, in Hebrew has taken the triliteral form lâqaq. In Arabic we have:

la'hiqa, to lick.	lasama, to taste.
la"hâ, to speak.	la*ṫ*a'ha, to lick.

d'Observations sur les Racines des Langues Sémitiques, par M. Klaproth.—Paris, 1828.

lahata, to exercise the tongue.	lâsa, to taste.
lagana, to lick.	lahasa, to lick.
lassa, to lick.	lisn, the tongue.
lasaba, to lick.	lasa'ha, to be maligned.

The same root exists as "lih" in Sanskrit, as λείχω in Greek, as "laigon" in Gothic, as "ligh" in Celtic, and in Latin "lingua." Again, with the frequent transition of *l*, the dental semi-vowel, into *d*, the dental media, we find, corresponding to the Latin lingua, or dingua, the Gothic "tuggo," and the English "tongue." That the word "glossary" should have grown out of this root LAK, may seem startling; still there is not a link wanting to connect the two words either in their form or in their meaning. Turning to the Turanian languages, we find the Finnic lakkia, to lick, though it may be doubted whether Mangu leke, to polish, Finnic laaha, the same, or Finnic lau, to speak, could safely be referred to the same source.

§ 7. *The three different Directions of Grammar, Turanian, Semitic, and Arian, represented by the three Sons of Feridun, Tur, Silim, and Irij.*

A. *Tur.*

As we have thus been carried back to times when we see the three principal tongues, which we may represent as the three sons of Feridún, as not yet separated, it may be of interest to catch at least one glimpse of them as they are leaving their common home and starting off in different directions. What they carried away from home were roots and pronouns. Two of them, Silim and Irij, seem both to have held the secret how a root could be divided and changed so that it might be used as a subject or as a predicate. Túr also may have known it; but he either forgot it, or he did not like to tamper with those sacred relics which he had carried away from his father's house. Under his care they remained the same, without addition or diminution; and when they had to be used, they were only set and framed like precious jewels, but neither divided nor polished down.* Now there were at least four things which Tur had to express with his roots and pronouns. If he possessed a

* Conf. pag. 286.

root for cutting, he wanted to say, I cut (present); I cut (past); cutter, i. e. knife; and my cutter, i. e. my knife. These four little phrases were indispensable for him if he wished to get on in the world. As long as he was alone with his family and children, he no doubt could make them understand by some expressive accent when ngò.tà (moi battre) meant "I beat," and when ngò-tà meant "my stick" (moi-bâton). What followed would generally remove all uncertainty, if it existed; for ngo.ta.ni, I-strike-thou (moi battre vous), could only mean "I strike thee." Again, as he could express *to-day* by "this light," and *yesterday* by "that light," perhaps his wife and children were not slow in understanding when he said kin-tien ngo.ta, this day I strike, i. e. I strike now (tout à l'heure moi battre); or tso-tien ngo.ta, that day I strike, i. e. I struck (jadis moi battre).*

All this may seem so natural, as far as construction goes, that at first one hardly discovers any thing peculiar in these different modes of expression. Still, in the construction of these two expressions, ngo.ta, I beat, and ngo-ta, my stick, there is something so individual and peculiar, that neither Silim nor Irij could imitate it. This is the liberty of putting the predicate first in one sentence and last in another. Silim could say ngo.ta, I beat (ẻ.q*t*ol), but never ngo-ta, my stick. He would have to put the predicate last in both phrases, and say ta-ngo, stick of me, like ẻ.q*t*ol, I-striking. Irij again, at least in his early youth, could say ngo-ta, my stick (mad-da*nd*a), but never ngo.ta, I-striking. Instead of this he had to say striking-I (tudâ.mi). This peculiarity by which Tur put the predicate sometimes first, sometimes last, may originally have been involuntary. As his roots were not yet distinguished as nominal and verbal, as subjective and predicative, his ngo.ta, I strike, may not have been meant for I striking, but, like ngo-ta, my stick, for my-striking. Still we shall see that, among his descendants, even after they had learned to distinguish between nominal and verbal roots, and between subjective and pre-

* "Qu'un étranger me dise, 'Moi avoir soif, moi vouloir boire, moi désirer manger,' je comprends ce langage; mais je ne puis m'empêcher de sentir que c'est un langage sans vie, sans nerf, sans liaison. Pourquoi? Parce que l'âme du discours, la force unitive, le nœud de la proposition, l'essence du jugement, le verbe en un mot s'y fait désirer, malgré la présence de l'infinitif."—*Dissertation Critique, par l'Abbé Darrigol*, p. 97.

dicative pronominal affixes, some retained the power of putting the subject first as well as last; such as agha-m, father of me, i. e. my father, and *sanî.bin*, knowing-I, i. e. I know. This applies, however, only to the North-Western descendants of Tûr; his other descendants place the predicate first always.

B. *Silim.*

Silim, as we saw, started from home fully aware that his roots might be made to answer two purposes. He therefore divided his roots into simple nouns and fuller verbs; also, he kept one set of his pronouns, which had already grown and multiplied around him, for his verbs, and another for his nouns. He had only one difficulty, which, with all his acuteness, he could not overcome: he could never think a predicate without first having thought his subject. Therefore he could say wrath (of) God, and wrath (of) me, but not God (s) wrath, and my-wrath. He also could say beating (of or to) me, i. e. I did beat, and I-beating, i. e. I beat, but not beating-I, i. e. I beat. The opportunity, however, which he had of forming at least these two verbal compounds, beating (of) me, and I-beating, was not lost by Silim; and as he found it essential to make his friends understand either that he had paid or that he meant to pay, he took the first form, paying (of) me, i. e. paying (belonging to me, or possessed and had by me), in the sense of the preterite, while the mere assertion of I-paying was left to answer the purpose of a present or a future payment.

C. *Irij.*

The mind of Irij was more comprehensive than that of Silim. He was able to think, as it were by one grasp, ideas such as "gold-piece," "God's love," &c., and he expressed them by a compound word, in which the predicate being second in thought, and therefore more present to his mind, came first in language. Now, as he could say God's love, *μητρ-ο-πολις*, father-land, Mahâ-*râga*, always putting the predicate first*, he could also say, I-love, I-wife, but only in the

* *Ἱπποπόταμος*, which is generally mentioned as an exception, is only a literal translation of an Egyptian word. On the difference between *Ἀνδρόφιλος* and *Φίλανδρος*, *Τιμόθεος* and *Θεότιμος*, *Δωρόθεος* and *Θεόδωρος*, see Pott, Personennamen, p. 88.

sense of my love, and my wife, because his first word is always the predicate. South of the "Snows" his descendants retained this manner of expression for many centuries. They said, mat-putra, tvat-putra, asmad-putra, my-son, thy-son, our-son. Their Northern brethren, however, found it more expedient to express the predicative nature of these pronouns more distinctly than could be done by mere position. They therefore formed an independent predicative form, whether genitive or adjective. This they were able to handle with greater freedom, so that they might now say τέκνον ἐμὸν as well as ἐμοῦ τέκνον. As to his verbal compounds, Irij had two ways opened before him, only just in the contrary direction to those of Silim. He could say loving-I, i. e. I love; and he did say so, after his verbal base had been qualified by reduplication or by Vikarana*s*. This compound phrase, however, was a mere predication, and could therefore hardly be restricted to any point in time, whether past, present, or future. It simply asserted a quality or an action. How then could Irij express his preterite? As he had as yet no auxiliary possessive verb, like the "habere" and "tenere" of his descendants, he could only use his possessive pronouns. But his possessive pronouns he could only use *before* a verbal base, while he was accustomed to mark all other formal changes at the end of words. Silim, when he found himself in the same dilemma, simply divided his pronouns in two, and put half before and half after the verb.* Irij had to do the same; but as he was putting his pronoun before the word, trying to pronounce ma-gâ, my-going, i. e. I went, the pronouns were so strongly attracted towards the end of the root, that all that remained in the place originally intended for the whole predicative pronoun was not even a distinctive consonant, as in Hebrew, but only a

* Ewald (§ 152.) explains the formation of the Hebrew Aorist in the following manner:—"The prefixes had to be pronounced as short as possible: one consonant, not even followed by a vowel, was all that remained of the prefixed pronoun. This consonant happened to be the same for several persons; confusion would inevitably have arisen, unless, by a very natural expedient, the pronominal prefix had been divided, so that the characteristic letters only remained as prefix, while the rest were thrown towards the end of the word. The pronoun of the second person sing. fem. being *a-tin*, *atin* was divided into at+in. *At* was shortened into *t* and prefixed, while *in* was suffixed, thus giving ti.qtel.î(n), thou (woman) killest.

strongly accented vowel, common to all these pronominal prefixes, and now called the augment; while the consonants, without their final vowels, were suffixed and placed at the end of the root. Thus, if there was a root *lip*, to write or paint, it could first be raised to a verbal base by reduplication. This verbal base *lilep*, writing, followed by predicative suffixes, would then give an aoristic compound, *lilep-a*, writing-I, I write, *lilep-itha*, writing-thou, thou writest. If afterwards a new and more actual verbal base was produced by the insertion of a nasal, such as *limp*, then, by the addition of predicative suffixes, *limpāmi*, *limpasi*, *limpati*, might be formed; and as these forms would express the present act of I am actually writing, the old present *lilepa* would in time take the sense of a perfect, I have written. The same root *lip*, however, being used as a subject, and not as a predicate, participating, therefore, more in the nature of a substantive than of an adjective, would, if preceded by possessive pronouns, express my-writing, i. e. writing belonging to me, i. e. I wrote, and thus á-lip-am (instead of ma-lip) would form the simplest and most primitive Arian preterite.

D. *The Descendants of Tur divided according to their Employment of the Pronominal Affixes.*

We have still to see how Tur proceeded in his verbal formations, as it is not likely that he could be satisfied with the Chinese juxtaposition of pronouns and words. Some of his descendants in Bhota and Bhotánta introduced formal elements to indicate the predicative or verbal nature of their roots; they formed their verbal bases, as we saw, by reduplication. They also used formal elements to indicate the predicative nature of their pronouns, and thus formed genitives, or pronominal adjectives. In Chinese already we have ngo-ti-sin, my heart. In ngo-ti-sin, *ti*, though originally it may have been a pronoun, cannot be compared with the Hebrew aser, or the Ethiopic za (masc.) and enta (fem.). In the Ethiopic mazmor za Dâwith, *za* is the masculine demonstrative or relative pronoun, referring to mazmor. It means the psalm which (to) David. But the Chinese min-li or min-ti-li expresses not the people which (is) power, i. e. the people of power, but people's power, where people's is the predicate, and therefore to be expressed either as the first

part of a compound or as an adjective. The late B. Garnett, in his valuable treatise on the origin of the Genitive, has not perceived this marked difference between Shem, on one side, and Japhet and Túr, on the other, and has tried to explain the Semitic and Arian genitive as the expression of one and the same logical process. In this he could not succeed; still his essay, like all he has written on comparative grammar, is very useful and important.

The Turanians, before they began to use their pronouns as suffixes or prefixes, could only form these two grammatical propositions—I-going (Bhot. ngá dó-ó), and mei pater (Mandshu, mi-ni ama). But after this period of their grammatical childhood was over, we are able to distinguish three divisions among the descendants of Túr, each marked by the peculiar manner in which they employed their pronominal affixes.

The first is the *Tamulian*, where subjective pronouns are always suffixed, and predicative pronouns always prefixed; where they say, as in Telugu, vaguta.nu, vaguta.vu, vaguta.du, speaking-I, thou, he, for I, thou, he speaks; and na-tandri, as it were me-pater, *i. e.* my father.

The second is the *Caucasian*, where likewise predicative pronouns are prefixed and subjective pronouns suffixed. For instance, Suanian, s-ab, w-ab, i-ab, my, thy, his father; and b-chask.a, chask.á, chask.as, I dig, thou diggest, he digs. In the first person of the verb, however, we see the pronoun put twice, prefixed as well as suffixed; and we also meet with a second verbal formation, where, as far as the very perplexing changes and additions of the Caucasian verbs allow us to judge, the pronoun was used throughout as a prefix; I mean such forms as the Lazian ma-zun, ga-zun, a-zun + asere, I ail, thou ailest, he ails. If in this verbal compound, the pronoun was originally and intentionally used as a prefix, we must take it as a possessive or predicative pronoun, and the tense itself for a preterite. The analogy in the formative process of Sansk. mat-pitar and Suanian s-ab, my father; Sansk. Khana.ti and Suanian chask.as, he digs; and Sansk. (m) agam.am and Lazian ma.zun, I ail, would then be complete. But whether this is so, or whether the Lazian *mazun* is altogether an impersonal formation, must remain uncertain until we get more ample information about the living languages of Colchis.

The third division is that of the *Altaic* Turanians. In them the method of joining roots and pronouns together is most intelligible and instructive. With the exception of the Samoiedic dialects, we hardly require new materials to enable us to judge of the mechanism of the Altaic suffixes. Castrén's work, "De Affixis Personalibus Linguarum Altaicarum" (1850), gives all the evidence that is required, carefully collected and arranged. I differ from him in one point only, and one which can easily be settled. All personal suffixes, if attached to nouns, he considers *eo ipso* as possessive, while all other suffixes are put down by him as predicative. These predicative suffixes, whether used after adverbs (as ende (here) + bi (I) = endebi; I am here) or after verbs (as tud.ok, I know), or after verbal adjectives (as sever.îm, I love), I call *subjective*, because they contain always the subject of a logical proposition. This, however, would only be a difference of terminology. But where I really differ from Castrén is in what he calls the second set of predicative, i. e. subjective, suffixes. These suffixes, whether they are used to express the preterite tense, or as exponents of transitive or definite verbs, are always (I only except the Samoiedic, of which too little is known to form an opinion) *possessive* suffixes, or *predicative* suffixes, in the sense in which I use this word, and they ought to be considered as a second set of possessive suffixes used after verbs, or rather after verbal nouns. In form they agree with the possessive suffixes, wherever these differ from subjective suffixes.

After this exposition, the mechanism of the Altaic pronouns is as simple, and at the same time as ingenious as can be. The Altaic Turanians differ from their brethren in so far as they put the predicative or possessive pronouns *after* the subject to which they belong. They say, as for instance in Hungarian and Tataric,

kés-em,	*my knife.*	u"hlu-m,	*my son.*
kés-ed,	*thy knife.*	*g*iftligi-ng,	*thy estate.*
kés-e,	*his knife.*	a"hadsh-i,	*his tree*; ana-si, *his mother.*
kés-ünk,	*our knife.*	u"hlu-muz,	*our son.*
kés-tek,	*your knife.*	*g*iftligi-ngiz,	*your estate.*
kés-ök,	*their knife.*	a"ha*g*-ilari,	*their trees*; ana-lari, *their mothers.*

This applies to all Altaic languages, for not one of them puts predicative suffixes before the word. They agree therefore on this

point with Shem, and differ alike from Japhet and from the other descendants of Tur. For the latter even in their earliest days, though they allowed themselves the liberty of putting the subjective pronoun before the verbal predicate, never ventured to place the predicative pronoun after its nominal subject; and on the heights of Pamer, as well as in the sub-Himalayan basins of the feeders of the Ganges, they rather formed pronominal genitives and adjectives, which, as in Greek, allowed of a freer construction, but they never pronounced a predicate, even where it was a mere pronoun, after the subject.

With regard to the subjective pronouns, the Altaic Turanians agree with the rest. Subjective pronouns, without exception, are placed after their predicates, the verbs. Thus we say

in Turkish √sev, to love,	in Hungarian, √hall, to hear,
ben sewèr-im, *I love.*	hallok, *I hear.*
sen sewèr-sen, *thou lovest.*	hallasz, *thou hearest.*
ol sewèr, *he loves.*	hall, *he hears.*
biz sewèr-iz, *we love.*	hallunk, *we hear.*
siz sewèr-siz, *you love.*	hallatok, *you hear.*
onlar sewèr-ler, *they love.*	hallanak, *they hear.*

These forms, with subjective suffixes, invariably express the present; but they are also put to other uses, which vary according to the genius of different dialects. Before, however, we enter into this, it will be necessary to state another general feature of these languages. It is this, that "where they do employ different suffixes for the *preterite*, these suffixes are always originally *possessive* or predicative." This is what Professor Boehtlingk remarks, with regard to the Yakut predicative, when he says that the possessive affixes form the (predicative) affixes of the preterite; as min *suoghum*, my absence, or I was absent. For instance,

Tataric.		*Turkish.*	
ana-m,	*my mother.*	sewèr-d-im,	*I loved.*
ana-ng,	*thy* „	sewèr-di-n',	*thou lovedst.*
ana-si,	*his* „	sewèr-di,	*he loved.*
ana-muz,	*our* „	sewèr-dik,	*we loved.*
ana-ngiz,	*your* „	sewèr-di-n'iz,	*you loved.*
ana-lari,	*their* „	sewèr-di-ler,	*they loved.*

Hungarian.

vár-t-am,	*I waited (for it),*	= késem,	*my knife.*
vártád,	*thou waitedst,*	= késed,	*thy* ,,
várta,	*he waited,*	= kése,	*his* ,,
vártuk,	*we waited,*	= késünk,	*our* ,,
vártátok,	*you waited,*	= késtek,	*your* ,,
várták,	*they waited,*	= késök,	*their* ,,

In forming these verbal compounds, the Altaic languages felt none of the difficulties which perplexed the Arian in forming their preterites. They had already thrown off the spell which bound them in pronouncing the subject before the predicate — that is to say, they had thrown it off where the predicate happened to be a pronoun, though not when it was a noun; they therefore could express I have loved, by "loving had or possessed of me," or "love belonging to me." But some of them went beyond this. The Hungarian, for instance, considering that tud.ok, knowing-I, was a phrase in which *I* (ok) was the subject and knowing (tud) the predicate, very properly refrained from having any object, whether expressed or not, governed by the verb. Even transitive verbs, such as "I expect," were taken as intransitive if followed by pronouns to which they served as predicates. "Varok," where "ok" is the subject, and "var" the verbal adjective, would mean I expecting, I wait. Varom, on the contrary, where "var" is the verbal noun, and "om" the predicative pronoun, would always express I expect something, "var" conveying an action requiring an object, whether expressed or not. "Olvasok" would mean I read, i. e. I can read; but I read Cicero, would be Ciceret olvasom. This gives an entirely new character to the Hungarian verb; for the Hungarian mind, once accustomed to this distinction, carried it out also through the other tenses; and while in the present the two sets of pronouns (predicative and subjective) naturally offered themselves for these two distinct purposes (transitive and intransitive, determinate or indeterminate), further distinctions were actually introduced into the possessive pronouns, already occupied by the preterites, in order to distinguish in the preterite also between vártad, thou expectedest (it), and vártál, thou waitedest. In Ostiakian the possessive pronouns form transitive, the subjective pronouns intransitive verbs, though their difference

is distinctly perceptible only in the second person plural. The difference of the tenses must then be expressed by derivative elements attached to the verbal base. In Lapponian the possessives belong to the preterites, the predicatives to the present.

Before leaving this subject, which I confess has carried me away beyond the limits it ought to occupy in a general description of the prominent features of Tur, yet in truth of great importance, not only for Turanian grammar, but for grammar in general, I must still mention one fact, to show how the spirit of analogy runs through the whole system of conjugation and declension. We have seen that in Hungarian suffixed pronominal possessives could be used for forming definite verbs. If we knew nothing of the history of that large family of languages to which the Hungarian belongs, and if we only saw, that én várok meant I wait, én várom, I expect (something), we should say, like most Hungarian grammarians, that *ok* was the exponent of indefiniteness, *om* of definiteness. Its origin once forgotten, it would become, as it were, the "definite article of the verb." Now what is the origin of the definite article or the definite form in nouns? Lâta in Samoiedic means "board;" lâtada, "the board," and the final *da* is the possessive suffix of the third person, so that originally it meant, his board. But this has been forgotten, — and if we now want to express his board, we have to say, puda latada, which is really, he-his board-his.* (Castrén, De affixis, pag. 11, Syrjæn. Grammar, p. 55.) In Syrjænian again, what has been taken for the termination of the accusative, is really the possessive pronoun not of the third, but of the first person. Adzja mortäs, now means, I see the man, but originally meant I see my man; and that it was so, we can still see in the second and third person. For while adzya meam mort-äs, means "I see my man," I see thy man, would be adzya tead mort-tä; I take his knife, bosti sya purt-sä.

* Cf. Castrén. Ostiake Grammar §. 61. Boehtlingk, Yakut Grammar, p. 10.

Sixth Section.

Etymological Peculiarities of the Turanian Languages.

But it is time to leave the history of these formal elements, and to proceed to a consideration of the matter of the Turanian languages. I suppose we may carry away with us the conviction that many things in language which now seem formal were originally substantial.

§ 1. *Radical Meaning generally discernible.*

We saw above how the Turanian roots were kept as integers, i. e. intact and uninjured, though framed, enclosed, and grouped together in various styles, and fitted to express verbs, adjectives, nouns, together with the most abstract and derivative ideas. The etymological meaning of Turanian words is therefore more palpable than in the Arian languages. Still the dictionary of the Turanians also had gone through many editions before it fell into our hands, and we find in it dead and petrified words just as in their grammar: and many of them more difficult to decipher and to revive than the pronominal compounds which we examined just now.

§ 2. *Scarcity of ancient Words common to all Turanian Languages, and identical in Form and Meaning.*

What are called dead or petrified words are in general the most ancient parts of a language; they carry us back to that period during which they were young and full of life; and in cases where a separation of languages took place, they frequently constitute the common heirloom of different dialects, and serve as the strongest indication for determining and settling the exact degree of relationship between cognate tongues. The general aversion which the Turanian languages have against any thing unintelligible, dead, or corrupt in grammar or dictionary, explains the small amount of these ingredients in most of them. It is well known, for instance, that in the several branches of the Arian family, different degrees of family-life, from

father and son, down to brother-in-law and sister-in-law, have, in many cases, preserved their common Arian name. These words agree, not only in root and meaning, but — and this is important — in their individual derivative suffixes also. The word for father is not only derived, in all the Arian languages, from the same root, pâ, to protect, — not only was the meaning of this root raised in the same manner from that of protector to that of father, — but the same derivative suffix also, *tar*, was preserved by all the descendants of *Japhet*, thus distinguishing the language of Japhet from the Chinese *fu* and *mu* (father and mother), the Tibetan *po* and *mo* (male and female), the Subhimalayan *'bâ* and *mâ* (father and mother), the Burmese *pha* and *ami*, the Siamese *po* and *me*, and from all words similar in sound and meaning, whether in Asia, Europe, or Africa.

Many derivations from this root pâ were possible, such as Sanskrit pâlaka, protector, Vaidik pâyu, pâvan, &c. Pâ-tar, therefore, must be considered entirely as the result of one individual choice. To maintain a word of this kind, even when its origin became dim, not to allow it to be replaced by a new and more intelligible expression, was possible in an Arian, i. e. a social state of language, not among nomadic tribes, who lived only for the present, little concerned about past or future, without history and without ambition. Thus we find that in the Turanian dialects the number of common words is small. Rémusat, in speaking of the Mandshu, says, "Je distingue trois sortes de mots dans la langue Mandchoue: les premiers lui sont communs avec celle des Tongous; ils expriment des idées simples, ou désignent des objets de première nécessité. Quoiqu'ils soient en assez petit nombre, ils n'en forment pas moins le fond de la langue. Une petite liste de mots essentiels mettra hors de doute l'identité du Mandchou et des différens dialectes des Tongous. La ressemblance d'un petit nombre de mots dans les langues des Mandchous et des Tongous, est d'un tout autre poids pour prouver leur communauté d'origine, que ne pourraient l'être les différences d'un plus grand nombre d'autres mots, si l'on vouloit en déduire la conséquence opposée." Professor Schott applies the same principle, only on a much larger scale, and for a different purpose: — "We ought not to despair about the affinity of these four great branches of languages (Tungusic, Mongolic, Turkic, and Finnic),"

he says, " although the words for the most necessary ideas in them are sometimes essentially different. The same remark might be made if we compare languages acknowledged to be sisters, nay, even dialects of the same speech. Tungusic as well as Finnic languages offer the most striking evidence on this point." (page 44.) In a former article Professor Schott had made the same observation with regard to Indo-European languages. There, also, ideas and objects of daily occurrence have sometimes been found under different names in dialects, the close relationship of which cannot be doubted. e. g.

Sanskrit.	*Greek.*	*Latin.*	*English.*
1 putras,	2 υἱός,	3 filius,	4 son.
1 duhitar,	1 θυγάτηρ,	2 filia,	1 daughter.
1 bhrâtar,	2 ἀδελφός,	1 3 frater, *Sp.* hermano,	1 brother.
1 strî,	2 γυνή,	3 femina,	4 woman.
1 purusha,	2 ἀνήρ,	3 vir,	4 man.
1 dyaus,	2 οὐρανός,	3 cœlum,	4 heaven.
1 prithivî,	2 γή,	3 terra,	4 earth.
1 kandra,	2 σελήνη,	3 luna,	4 moon.
1 siras,	2 κεφαλή,	3 testa (tête),	4 head.
1 pâṇis,	2 χείρ,	3 manus,	4 hand.
1 vadanam,	2 στόμα,	3 os,	4 mouth.
1 vrikshas,	2 δένδρον,	3 arbor,	4 tree.
1 pakshî,	2 ὄρνις,	3 avis,	4 bird.
1 pâshâṇas,	2 πέτρα,	3 saxum,	4 stone.
1 arhas,	2 ἄξιος,	3 dignus,	4 worth.
1 kesas,	2 θρίξ,	3 crinis,	4 hair.
1 netram,	2 ὀφθαλμός,	3 oculus,	3 eye.
1 nadî,	2 ποταμός,	3 fluvius,	4 river.
1 asṛik,	2 αἷμα,	3 sanguis,	4 blood.

In the Semitic family, Professor Schott has pointed out the difference between Hebrew and Arabic words, such as

Hebrew.	*Arabic.*	*English.*
yârê*h*a,	gamar,	moon.
har,	*g*ebel,	mountain.
'hêz,	*s*agar,	tree.
*e*bhen,	hagar,	stone.

Even in languages whose relation to one another is not that of sister to sister, like Sanskrit, Greek, and Latin, but of daughter to mother, like French and Latin, we find the most common objects expressed by different words. For instance,

	Latin.		*French.*	*Italian.*	*Spanish.*
instead of	ignis,	we find	feu,	fuoco,	fuego.
	æger,	„	malade,	malato,	enfermo.
	anser,	„	oie,	oca,	oca.
	caput,	„	tête,	testa,	testa.
	discere,	„	apprendre,	apprendere,	aprender.
	domus,	„	maison,	casa,	casa.
	jecur,	„	foie,	fegato,	higado.
	lapis,	„	pierre,	pietra,	piedra.
	os,	„	bouche,	bocca,	boca.
	verbum,	„	parole,	parola,	palabra.
	via,	„	chemin,	camino,	camino.
	cogitar,	„	penser,	pensare,	pensar.*

It might be objected that in many instances a more careful study of these languages, and particularly of their ancient history and their dialects, would have enabled us to point out corresponding words even where the most usual expressions differ. It might be said that although the usual word for caput be tête in French, still caput could be identified with the French chef, or *vice versâ*, the French tête with Latin testa. Again, it might reasonably be remarked, that in the choice of our words from Sanskrit, Greek, and Latin, we have intentionally omitted synonymes which would establish an agreement between these languages.

If, instead of netram, oculus, we had taken the Sanskrit akshi; instead of pakshî, avis, the Sanskrit vi; instead of vadanam, os, âs,

* There are other words in Arian and Turanian languages, which, though they may be considered as common property, have suffered so much from a process of assimilation and accommodation in each dialect, that though we see a similarity, we hardly are able to recognise identity. I mean such words as wag-tail, which in German has been turned into Bachstelze (brook-stilter), while in Italian it is translated into coditremola, in French into hoche-queue, in Greek into σεισοπυγίς and κίλλουρος. In Sanskrit the conception is different, for it is called there not "wag-tail" but "lame-walker."

the Sanskrit and Latin would have agreed. But it was our object to show how by the very fact of collateral expressions, or by the undergrowth of new popular names, the same diversity which strikes us in closely allied nomadic idioms can be detected, though in a smaller degree, between the members of the Arian family, nay, even between such languages as Italian and Latin. If the sudden irruption of a stream of nomadic tribes over the ruins of the Roman empire could stir up the whole basis of the Latin, and bring out again the long-repressed nomadic tendencies of an Arian language to such an extent as to change the whole surface of its words and its grammar, why should we feel surprised at similar results in languages where no literary or political centralisation has ever checked the superfetative tendencies of the human tongue? And further, if in the Arian words we had chosen our instances, not from the leading literary languages, like the Latin of Cicero and the English of Shakspeare, but from provincial dialects, under whose protection the nomadic life of a language continues often unobserved up to the present day, we should have been able to show a still greater approach between Arian fluctuation and Turanian unsettledness. Grimm, when speaking of the earliest periods of the German language, describes this most beautifully.* "The idiom of Nomads," he says, "contains an abundant wealth of manifold expressions for sword and weapons, and for the different stages in the life of their cattle. In a more highly cultivated language, these expressions become burdensome and superfluous. But, in a peasant's mouth, the covering, bearing, calving, falling, and killing of almost every animal, has its own peculiar term, as the sportsman delights in calling the gait and members of game by different names. The eye of these shepherds, who live in the free air, sees farther, their ear hears more sharply,—why should their speech not have gained the same living truth and variety?"

§ 3. *Turanian Numerals.*

The Turanian Numerals, if considered from this point of view, tend to illustrate and confirm the principles which we before tried

* History of the German Language, p. 20.

to establish. They do so particularly if contrasted with Arian numerals. The Arian nations, it is well known, have preserved their ancient common numerals as the most precious gifts of their childhood. Even when rust and decay had disfigured and obscured their value and meaning, they were never parted with or replaced by new-coined words. The Turanian languages, though more careful of their numerals than of other words which could be thrown away at random, and replaced instantaneously, have not been able to preserve in every instance those common terms by which they first counted from one to ten. At first sight, a general similarity between the Turanian numerals is undeniable, unless we extend the limits of chance to an unprecedented extent. But, on closer inspection, it becomes clear that some dialects have lost their ancient numerals altogether, while others have lost them partially, and made good their losses by new-formed words. In some cases, the words particularly for one and two, we may admit the original existence of synonymes, from which each dialect selected its own pecular term. The same applies to the Arian languages, for, although a comparison of Sanskrit and Hindustani * numerals would convince every one how faithfully the Arian dialects in general maintain their linguistic conservatism, yet Sanskrit differs with regard to the words for "one," even from its nearest relative, the Zend, and both from Greek and Latin. The same applies to the Latin secundus, Greek δεύτερος, and Sanskrit dvitîya, — nay, perhaps to the Slavonic word for nine, — though here the difference may be explained on phonetic grounds.

That there are coincidences in the numerals even between Arian and Semitic languages, has frequently been pointed out; the difficulty has been to explain why these coincidences should be so palpable for six and seven, and hardly perceptible in other cases. But this admits of the same solution as the differences between several Turanian dialects, only on a larger scale. Some numerals were retained, and thus account for coincidences; others were entirely lost, and replaced after the separation of tribes or whole families, such as the Arian and Semitic. In the Brahvî we have, according to Pro-

* *Sanskrit* ekâdasa = *Hind.* 'igâre*h*, *eleven.*
dvâdasa = „ bâre*h*, *twelve.*
ûnavinsati = „ 'unîs, *nineteen.*

fessor Lassen's researches, a clear case of a language preserving its numerals for one, two, and three, but adopting all the rest from a foreign source. In the Magar language, the numerals from one to five have been preserved, and the rest taken from the Parvatîya. In the languages of the Dekhan, the native numerals and Sanskrit numerals are used promiscuously, which in time may lead to similar results.

§ 4. *On Phonetic Corruption.*

The numerals common to several dialects of the Turanian family are also instructive with regard to the extent to which phonetic corruption can be carried in a nomadic state of language. The reason why, with numerals and pronouns, the Turanian languages submit to a greater amount of phonetic corruption than they would tolerate in other words, is simply this, that nothing would be more difficult to re-express by any composition or derivation, than the simple ideas embodied in pronouns and numerals. Even where their body is emaciated, and their features distorted, they are retained, because even so more easily recognised by all than newly-invented substitutes would be. In the Turanian numerals, therefore, if compared together, we have what we could not expect to find otherwise in any of these ephemeral languages, — historical deposits of the progress and change of Turanian speech. While in the Arian languages, we may study the changes of letters, by comparing different phases of one and the same dialect, — as Sanskrit and Hindustani, Gothic and English, we must here rest satisfied with comparing different dialects, even though the respective date when each has been fixed may remain indeterminate: we must compare languages which perhaps stand to one another as, for instance, Pâli to Italian, — two Arian dialects, which, though distant in time, are so analogous in their phonetic changes, that, if examined on phonetic grounds only, we might take them for twins. The possible phonetic changes in the Turanian dialects, are, of course, to their full extent, not yet determined, though much has been done for this by Professor Schott. And Professor Boehtlingk, in his Yakut grammar, has succeeded in reducing these phonetic changes

to something like law and order. Sometimes they seem greater than those admissible between Arian languages. Castrén, in his "Dissertatio de Affixis personalibus," considers k = t (p. 43.). He says (p. 49.) that a final t may be softened into a breathing, and this breathing again be hardened into a k. He frequently considers t and n interchangeable (p. 49.), and seems to hold the plural terminations, t, k (h), je', sañ, säñ, la, and ', identical in origin. In his Syriane grammar (§ 26.), he derives jas from äs, and compares this final s with Lapp. h, and Finn. t. Changes like these may appear fanciful, and, if transitions of gutturals into dentals, aspirates, and sibilants, were admitted as general principles applicable to every word at random, there would be an end to all scientific etymology. But there is a vast difference between the historical and the unhistorical application of such principles. Armenian hayr is the same as Latin pater, not because, as a general principle, p is changeable into h, but because it can be proved by facts to be so in Armenian, where pes (foot) is het; prithu (broad) is harth; panka, five, is hing; πῦρ, fire, is hour. Again, as mater becomes mayr, in Armenian and French, pater in Armenian must, or at least can be hayr. If we know that languages *are* historically connected, as, for instance, Latin and French, we can state as a fact, that lacryma can be changed into larme. We may even go a step beyond, and say that δακρυ, tear, and larme are all derived from the same root. But if, on the strength of this, we were to assume that δακ could always be changed into *lar*, and hence identify the Turkish plural *lar* with the Tibetan plural *dag*, we should no longer be on historical ground, nor should we be working "in the spirit of Bopp's system."*

What has been said with regard to the numerals, applies, to a great extent, to the pronouns also. In the Arian languages, we know that the pronouns deviate considerably from the analogy of other nouns. Their terminations are called irregular, and in many cases their origin and meaning cannot be deciphered even by the help of Comparative Philology. The reason is, that in the declension of the pronouns the

* Cf. Hodgson, Journal of the A. S. B., 1853, p. 31, where what is meant by the "spirit of Bopp's system," refers, I suppose, to Bopp's Comparative Grammar.

Arian languages preserved some ancient relics of grammar, while in the declension of nouns the power of analogy tended to eliminate similar husky asperities. The pronouns being used continually, and having less of a material meaning than other nouns, had become fixed, formal, or inorganic, long before the rest of the grammar was consolidated. Hence, in their further dispersion, the Arian dialects were unable to preserve for the pronouns the same amount of vital growth which in Greece, for instance, formed the common Arian grammar into its Greek type, or which in Germany gave its Teutonic expression. Pronominal forms had arrived at a state of grammatical numbness *before* the separation of the Arian family. Hence, on the one hand, the striking similarity of pronouns in all Arian tongues, and, on the other, their liability to merely phonetic corruption. To this it is owing — to mere awkwardness in pronunciation, and not to any regular modification — that Latin *ego* becomes *yo* in Spanish, *eu* in Portuguese, *io* in Italian, *je* in French; and thus also Sk. *aham*, ego, became finally *I* in English. Yet even here we can discover rules, or at least broad analogies, according to which certain letters in one language are generally changed into the same letters in another. We find that Sanskrit s becomes Zend h, and Sanskrit h becomes Zend z; therefore the change of Sk. sahasra, thousand, into Zend hazanra is perfectly regular. According to the same analogy, Sk. aham, I, must in Zend be azem; and as in Armenian this Zend z is frequently represented by s, there is nothing irregular in the Armenian* es, I; nor shall we be obliged to go to Mongolian dialects in order to explain the Ossetic *az*, I, whatever Tataric or Tartaric scholars may say to the contrary.

The Turanian languages, though they preserved the vitality of their grammar to a much larger extent than any Arian dialect, yet were unable to avert altogether the same disorganizing influence from their pronouns. Some of their pronominal forms are therefore entirely Arian in principle, that is to say, anomalous and unintelligible; and what has generally been considered (wrongly, as has been shown) a distinguishing feature of Arian grammar, that "by some unknown process, forms are evolved from the body of a noun like branches of

* See Windischmann's classical Essay "On the Arian Basis of the Armenian."

a tree springing from the stem," would in this case seem to apply with real force to the Turanian languages. If we take Turanian grammar, even in its least developed state, we find, for instance, in Mandshu, forms which, so far as the principle of their formation is concerned, would have to be pronounced Arian, according to Schlegel's definition of this term. We find *bi*, I; *mini*, mine; *be*, we; *si*, thou; *soue*, you; *i*, he; *tche*, they; that is to say, we find different bases for the same pronoun, and different forms of the same base produced, not by agglutination, but by what has been called a principle of "inward growth." What difference, as far as the principle of declension goes, is there between Greek ὁ changed in the plural to οἱ, and Mandshu *bi*, I, changed in the plural to *be*, we?* Many similar cases will be seen in an appendix containing a comparative list of pronouns. It is hopeless to attempt to discover in these inorganic forms the elements of agglutination. The same applies to the distinction of gender, which, though in most cases marked by additional syllables, whether nominal or pronominal, is sometimes expressed in such a manner that we can only explain it by ascribing an expressive power to the more or less obscure sound of vowels. Ukko, in Finnic, is an old man; akka, an old woman (in Canarese, akka, elder sister). In Mandshu, chacha is mas (Mong. acha, Turkish agha, elder brother, uncle); cheche, femina. Again, ama in Mandshu is father, eme, mother; amcha, father-in-law (Mongol. abagha), emche, mother-in-law (Mongol. emeke, grandmother). The same change of vowels expresses in other languages remoteness or proximity, as in Canarese, where "ivanu" is hic, "avanu" ille, and where, according

* Mr. Hodgson, for instance, analyses the Mandshu *tese*, they (or, as he writes, te-se-t) into *te*, he, and *se*, thou; and he denies that in Mandshu the plural can be formed by an additional *se*, because it is not always formed so, and because, as he says, a regular pluralizing particle would be uniformly applied and wear one shape. Now, this is not quite true either in Arian or Turanian grammar, and particularly not with regard to pronouns. Sivas in the plural makes sivâs; sarvas makes sarve; ego makes nos; Mandshu *bi* makes *be*. But in tese, *se* certainly seems the regular plural termination, only that after nouns it is restricted to words expressive of living beings. Thus, *dchoui*, child, makes *dchouse*, children; *wang*, king, *wangsa*, kings; *morin*, horse, *morisa*, horses. (See Gabelentz, § 24). The *se* in *tese* is most likely, therefore, the same *se* which we find in *ese*, hi, from *ere*, hic; and not the pronoun of the second person glued to that of the first, as Mr. Hodgson supposes. (J. A. S. B. 1853, p. 69. seq.)

to Weigle, there existed formerly a third intermediate pronoun, uvanu.

What we have here said proves that in the Turanian languages also, a greater allowance should be made for phonetic influences, whether accidental, as in phonetic corruption, or intentional, as in phonetic distinctions. Though our conviction may be that in an earlier state of language these formal changes also had a material origin, yet their analysis must baffle all ingenuity, and shows the truth of the saying, "Boni grammatici est nonnulla etiam nescire."

§ 5. *On scarce Words.*

After considering words which are of daily use and frequent occurrence, and which, therefore, even in so porous a state of society as that of nomadic hordes, have a chance of remaining on the surface, we have still for a moment to bring before ourselves the effects which the same state of society would have on words of rare occurrence. Even at the present day, with all the speaking, preaching, and reading we have to undergo, many men never use half the words which belong to their own language. Writers, again, are so little aware occasionally of the existence of certain words in their own language, that they coin new ones, though there is really no demand for them. If the new, however, become current, the old are melted down altogether, unless preserved in dictionaries, or revived by new editions of old books. But let us think for a moment of all the changes and chances of nomadic tribes, — of the small sphere of ideas and words in which their language moves permanently and continuously, — of the little support which expressions of a higher range, or names of a poetical tinge, though used once or twice by a poet or a king, would receive in Asiatic steppes, where men spend their life between hunting, fighting and eating, and women are kept only for breeding children and feeding cattle! It is rather surprising, that so many words should have remained for centuries in the sieve of languages like the Mongolians; and we have no right to expect that between tribes separated probably as early as any of the Arian nations, words belonging to the higher ranges of thought should be found to agree entirely.

Seventh Section.

On Turanian Languages approaching to an Arian Type.

§ 1. *Arian Elements in Hungarian, Turkish, Finnish.*

If the unsettled state of grammar and dictionary in the Turanian languages is the result of that nomadic state of society in which they grew up and live, we should expect that this effect would cease whenever nomadic races enter into a state of political consolidation. This is the case to a certain extent. Wherever there is a written literature and fixed standard of grammar kept up by the higher classes, the Turanian character approaches more and more to an Arian type. For the same reason, we expect a larger number of formal coincidences between Hungarian and Turkish, or between Hungarian and Finnish, than between the Samoïeds of the Lake Altin and the Aimaks of Persia. In Turanian languages which have received a literary cultivation, as Finnish, Turkish, and Hungarian, forms occur which are corrupted into something very much like inflection: and here the separate stones of the grammatical mosaic can hardly now be taken to pieces. Irregular forms become frequent, and words partake more of a conventional and historical than of an etymological character. We see here how a Turanian may nearly become an Arian language; and, in looking at the earliest specimens of Arian grammar, such as Sanskrit, we may observe in an Arian language traces of an evanescent Turianism. In Sanskrit, although grammatical forms have been regulated and reduced by a sound economy, instances occur of superfluous distinctions, successfully comprehended by the Greek genius within more general categories. In Finnish, for instance, every imaginable relation of noun to noun and noun to verb can be expressed by what is called a case termination. We find a different suffix for the objective case when I beat a child, or when I strike it on a certain part of its body, — resembling thus the Greek genitive and accusative after verbs of a similar meaning. There are no less than fifteen cases in Finnish, and yet no pure accusative!*

* Mr. Hodgson makes a similar remark with regard to the verb: "A Tatar," he says, (J. A. S. B., 1853, p. 129.) "cannot endure that confusion of the precative, optative, and imperative which our imperative mood exhibits. But he

All these cases are expressed by suffixes, some even by compound suffixes, to exhibit more complicated relations. The following table will give an idea of Hungarian declension: *kés*, as we saw before, was knife; kesem, my knife. This is declined:

1. Késem, my knife.	en, I.
2 Késemnek, of my knife.	
3. Késemnek, to my knife.	nek-em, to me.
4. Késemet, my knife.	en-g-em-et, me (or eng-em).
5. Késemert, on account of my knife.	ert-em, on my account.
6. Kesemmel, with my knife.	vel-em, with me.
7. Késemmé, toward my knife.	
8. Késemül, as my knife.	
9. Késemkent, like my knife.	
10. Késembe, into my knife.	
11. Késemben, inside my knife.	benn-em, in me.
12. Késemböl, from within my knife.	bil-em, in me.
13. Kesemre, upon my knife (coming).	r-am, upon me.
14. Késemen, on my knife (resting).	
15. Késemröl, down from my knife.	rol-am, from me.
16. Késemhez, toward my knife.	hozzam, toward me.
17. Késemnel, near my knife.	nal-am, near me.
18. Késemtöl, away from my knife.	töl-em, away from me.
19. Késemig, as far as my knife.	

It is true that many of these terminations are only postpositions, and might therefore be compared rather with the prepositions than with the case terminations of the Arian languages. Yet the case is somewhat different. The noun, together with these postpositions, forms, in Hungarian, a phonetic unity; it has but one accent, and the harmony of vowels connects the two still more closely. The real difference is this, that the Arian case terminations can no longer be used separately, while many of these postpositions occur as prepositions also. This may be seen in looking at the declension of the personal pronoun in Hungarian, which, therefore, I have put side by side with the nominal paradigm.

remedies the defect, not by the multiplication of grammatical forms, but by the use of distinct words, or distinct multiplications of the same word. Thus, *Davo*, solicits, *Davong*, commands, et sic de cæteris.

§ 2. *Turanian Elements in Sanskrit.*

As we see the tendency of the Arian languages to reduce the variety of their terminations, we may suppose that even the richest grammatical language, the Sanskrit, was, at a period previous to the Vaidik, and beyond our knowledge, richer still. In the dual, for instance, the genitive and ablative might each have had a distinctive form, as in the singular; and the same power of concentration, abstraction and method, which made the Greek feel satisfied with two cases in the dual, may have led the Hindú to divest himself of what he began to feel as an "embarras de richesse." After a time, however, this sound economy of the Arian languages seems to lead to an involuntary meagerness. By causes quite unintentional — corrupt pronunciation, for instance — cases become identical, and are no longer distinguishable even where their distinction is necessary for logical purposes. A principle reappears then at work in modern languages, which apparently may be called Turanian, — the principle of periphrastic, or, as it has been called, analytical formation. The phrase "de illo philosopho," the French "du philosophe," instead of "philosopho," is to a certain extent Turanian, though not entirely, because the distinguishing words are put before, not after the word they determine. Its modern contraction again, "du philosophe," is not purely Arian. *Du* does not stand to *le* in the same relation as τοῦ to ὁ. Du, instead of "de illo," is produced by a corruption of words which had before been articulated grammatically; — it is the remnant of a phrase; while τοῦ * is the corruption of a compound, the component parts of which were pure radicals, not yet determined by grammatical terminations. The same applies to the periphrastic form "*j'aimer-ai*," I have to love, which even in its contraction *j'aimerai* can only be called quasi-Turanian, because it rests on a different principle of formation from that which produced ama-bo. There is a distinction between these secondary Arian

* The Greek Genitive τοῦ stands for τοῖο, τοῖο for τοσιο, the Sanskrit tasya. In tasya, *ta* is the pronominal base, *sya* a suffix which forms Genitives and Adjectives. Thus Prof. Bopp compares somewhere δημοσιο, the original form of the Greek genitive, which afterwards becomes δήμοιο and δήμου, with the Adjective δημόσιος.

and the primary Turanian formations, as there is also a vast difference between the reduced state of Arian grammar in the middle ages and the undeveloped state of Turanian grammar in the Tungusic and Mongolic branches.

§ 3. *Ascending Scale in the Turanian Languages.*

There is an ascending scale in the grammatical life of Turanian languages, running nearly parallel with the political and literary position of these nations. This has been pointed out by Schott and by Castrén. The *Tungusic* branch is the lowest; its grammar is not much richer than Chinese, and in the structure there is an absence of that architectonic order which in Chinese unites the Cyclopean stones of their language without further cement. This applies, however, principally to the Mandshu; other Tungusic dialects spoken, not in China, but in the original seats of the Donkis, are said to be richer in form. The *Mongolic* dialects excel the Tungusic, but, particularly in their written language, the different members of speech are hardly as yet articulated. The spoken idioms of Tungusians, as well as Mongolians, are evidently still struggling towards a more organic life. Professor Schott's remark, "that the Turanian verb which in Mandshu and Mongolian seems, as it were, inanimate, receives its life only in Turkish, by means of a connection of roots and pronouns," requires modification, since Castrén brought evidence of an incipient life in the grammar of the Buriäts and the dialect of Nyerchinsk. The mere juxtaposition of a pronoun and a root, as we find it in Mandshu:

bi khoachambi, I feed,
si khoachambi, thou feedest,
ere niyalma khôachambi, this man feeds,

is hardly as yet grammatical. But Castrén assures us that instead of the invariable khoachambi through all the persons and numbers, he heard among Tungusic tribes distinctly the following terminations:

Singular.			Plural.		
1	2	3	1	2	3
u, f.	s.	n.	wun.	sun.	l.

These terminations are radical pronouns, and in the Tungusic dialect attach themselves to nouns as well as to verbs, taking in the former case the character of possessive, in the latter the character of predicative affixes. The Mongolic dialect, in which Castrén observed the same tendency, had advanced another step, for it made also formal distinction between possessive and predicative affixes. These are:

Predicatives.

Singular.			Plural.		
I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.
p, m.	s'. c'.	—	bida.	ta. t.	—

Possessives.

m.	s'. c'.	n (ńi)	manai	tani.	n (ńi.)

The differences between these two sets appear small, but are characteristic. The possessive affix of the first person singular, for instance, can never be *p*, because it is connected with the oblique base of the pronoun of the first person, *mini*, while the *p* of the predicative affix can only be explained by a reference to the nominative *bi*.

All this, however, is but a small beginning, particularly if we compare the profusion of grammatical stores which the *Turkic* languages display. These are next in order. With regard to their system of conjugation, the Turkic dialects can hardly be surpassed. Their verbs are like branches, breaking down beneath the heavy burden of fruit and blossom; and the excellence of the Finnic languages, richer in declension than the Turkic, consists, as far as the verb is concerned, rather in a diminution than increase of forms. Castrén says: "Progrediente in dissertatione apparuit affixa personalia in linguis Burjatica et Tungusica inchoata adhuc esse et quasi nascentia, in Turcicis vero jam formâ uti perfectiore magisque explanatâ, in Finnicis demum et Samojedicis linguis summum evolutionis gradum adepta esse."

The difference between the primary formations of Turanian and the secondary formations of Arian languages may be explained, if we consider that in *je vivrai*, i. e. ego (aham) vivere (*gîv*-as-ê, dat. neutr.) habeo (bhâv. ayâ. mi), we have a number of articulated forms,

resolved as it were again into simple matter, while in the Tungusic verb, grammatical form is produced for the first time by the mere connection of material elements.

Eighth Section.

Evidence of the common Origin of the Turanian Languages summed up.

If after these considerations we look again at the problem of the affinity of the Turanian languages, and compare the evidence brought forward by Gyarmathi, Rask, Schott, and Castrén, with the amount which, from the nature of the case, we have a right to expect, most scholars, I think, will admit, that so far as it *can* be proved, proof of this affinity has been given. No doubt it may still be more fully confirmed, and many important questions remain for solution. But it may be regarded as no less proved than the affinity of the Indo-European languages was in the days of Sir W. Jones and Frederick Schlegel.

With regard to *roots* and *words*, in their primary and secondary meanings, Schott's "Essay on the Altaic Race," making every reasonable allowance for waste, is conclusive as to their natural affinity. Differences, such as exist in Turanian languages, between identical dialects, if spoken in different valleys, we must be prepared to find in cognate idioms, separated so far and so long — by centuries and by continents.

With regard to *pronominal roots*, Castrén has proved in some cases their identity, not only in character but in sound, with such accuracy that more on this point can scarcely be expected.

With regard to *grammatical forms*, we must consider that nearly the whole grammatical structure of the Turanian languages is built up from pronominal elements, which pervade not only the conjugation but the declension, nay, even the syntax of these dialects. As to the *other grammatical elements*, postpositions I mean principally, or similar particles, they also exhibit salient coincidences in some points, while their diversity on others does not mean more

than when we see in Italian an ablative formed by *da* (*de a*), and in French by *de;* or where, as in Wallachian, the genitive is formed by *a*, the accusative by *pre* (per), the ablative by *déla*, the dative taking no preposition at all: while further in the same Romanic idiom the article is put behind the substantive, reversing the order of its cognate dialects. Coincidences in these grammatical exponents will have to be mentioned when we point out their similarity with the case-terminations of the Dekhan dialects.

The *syntactical character* of the Turanian languages is also strongly marked, whether we look at their method of connecting roots and grammatical exponents into words, or words into sentences. In the first case all grammatical exponents must be added to the end of a base: bases tolerate no initial changes or additions. The grammatical terminations, though joined to roots, and this even euphonically, can with few exceptions be separated from the base. They are sometimes written separately, and admit intermediate elements, such as késnek and kes-em-nek. In the second case, as a general rule, the governed or determining always precedes the governing or determined word. Therefore *pre*positions governing a noun are impossible in Turanian languages. Conjunctions are scarce, the connection of sentences being marked by gerunds, or other verbal forms, with postpositions.

With regard to the *phonetic character*, the law of the "harmony of vowels" pervading these languages, and manifesting itself most strongly where artificial influences, such as writing, have least interfered, is a family feature not less strongly marked. It can only be compared with the triliteral character of the Semitic, or the peculiar accents and intonations of the so-called monosyllabic languages.*

* That these accents occur in languages more polysyllabic in their structure than either Greek or English, is shown by Hodgson and Robinson. The latter describes four accents in Gangetic and Lohitic dialects:—

"These intonations, depending as they do only on a modified action of those parts of the larynx which most immediately affect the voice, are, in general, exceedingly difficult for an European practically to distinguish. On a careful examination, however, it will be found that these tones do not in reality exceed *four*, and that they are the same as those described by Chinese philologists.

"The *first* of these may be said to be pronounced naturally, as a middle tone, even and moderate, neither raised nor deepened by any peculiar effort.

Like these numerous accents, the harmony of vowels is such as can hardly be presented accurately in writing; nay, even in speaking it requires a practised ear to distinguish, and a throat still more practised to imitate it. This law exists in the Tungusic, Mongolic, Tataric, and Finnic classes, though it does not influence all their dialects with equal force. Traces of a certain vocalic equilibrium occur, however, also in other classes of the Turanian family, as may be seen from the examples quoted by Mr. Hodgson from the Gyarung dialect. (J. A. S. B. 1853, p. 30.).

With regard to the *historical evidence*, I need not repeat the leading characteristics common to these nations, so powerfully stated in your Lecture. But I shall conclude with an extract from Abulghasi's History of the Tatars, which has been discussed by Deguignes, Klaproth, Rémusat, Gabelentz, and Schott, and as a tradition is certainly curious, because it shows that even in later times, when Mongolic and Tataric had by mistake become the names of two races, differing in languages, religion, and manners, a feeling prevailed among themselves as to their common descent, which could hardly owe its origin to any preconceived ethnological opinion entertained by Abulghasi, the Khan of Khiva, the descendant of Chinghiskhan, and contemporary of Sanang-Setsen (1664). He relates that all the nations of Central and Northern Asia descended from one ancestor called *Turk*, who was the son of *Japhet*, who was the son of *Noah*. Among his descendants two brothers are mentioned, *Mongol* and *Tatar*. It seems probable that Turk, though at Constantinople it has now become a name of abuse, was in truth one of the oldest collective names of the Turanian race. Chinese authors recognised it in the 5th century B.C., when speaking of the *Tukiuei*, as a branch of the *Hiung-nu*. The etymology they give is fanciful; for Turk, however it may have been explained afterwards, whether by the Turks themselves or by

"The *second* is a strong, rough, and vehement sound, produced by strongly exciting the action of the glottis in emitting it.

"The *third* tone is formed by raising the action of the glottis, as in forming the second tone, and then somewhat relaxing it, which, while it lengthens the sound, makes it end rather feebly.

"The *fourth* tone may be characterised as a short, thick, hasty sound, which seems to re-enter the throat, so as at length to be stopped in it." (See J. A. S. B., 1849, p. 192.)

Chinese writers, was originally a corruption of Tûra, Turvasa, Turushka, all names given by the Arians to equestrian Nomads and Indo-Scythian tribes north of the Himâlaya. One of the sons of Feridun, we may further notice, was called Tur; and when the father divided his kingdom between the children, he gave Turán to Tur, Iran to Irij, and Rum and Kháwer to Silim. Irij is killed by his brothers; but the kings of Persia descend alternately from the three brothers, — Menúchihr being an Iranian, Afrásiyáb a Turanian, Garshasp a Silimian. The names, therefore, Arian and Turanian, though now confined to scientific use, have yet a history of their own, which in its general bearing answers well with the technical objects for which they are at present employed.

Such is the case for the affinity of the Turanian languages. I have been here able to state the argument only in general: for matters of detail I must refer to Schott, Castrén, Gabelentz and Boehtlingk. To the objections raised by the last-named philologist I have paid particular attention; but although modifying some of the supposed characteristics of the Turanian languages, and recommending caution and more definite argumentation, they cannot be held to invalidate the conclusions arrived at in common by men like Rask, Gabelentz, Schott and Castrén.

If the principles here laid down are considered valid for establishing the relationship of languages, I am inclined to maintain that, similarly with these five classes, Finnic, Samoiedic, Tataric, Mongolic, and Tungusic, the Tamulic, Bhotîya, Taï, and Malay languages also belong to the same Turanian race.

SECOND CHAPTER.

ON THE TURANIAN CHARACTER OF THE TAMULIC LANGUAGES.

First Section.

The Arian Settlers and Aboriginal Races of India.

The name by which the whole class of the aboriginal languages of India is best known to us, was given it by the Brahmans. "D e k h a n" is a corruption of the Sanskrit "d a k s h i *n* a," which means "right" (dexter). To the Brahman who, in fixing his position, always imagined himself looking toward the rise of the sun, whatever lay to the south of his own country, was "dakshi*n*â" or "to the right." As the frontiers of the Brahmanic settlements were gradually extended, the meaning of Dakshi*n*â or Dakshi*n*apatha became more definite, till at last the chain of the Vindhya-mountains was fixed upon as the natural frontier between what the Brahman called his holy-land and the Dekhan. It is now generally admitted that this holy-land of the Brahmans, even within its earliest and narrowest limits, between the Sarasvatî and D*r*ishadvatî, was not the birthplace of the sons of Manu. The Arians were strangers in the land of the Indus and Ganges, but no one can now determine the exact spot whence they came and where they had been previously settled. Traditions, current among the Brahmans as to the northern regions, considered the seats of the blessed, may be construed into something like a recollection of their northern immigration — holy places along the rivers of Northern India, where even in later times Brahmans went to learn the purest Sanskrit, may mark the stations of their onward course — the principal capitals of their ancient kingdoms may prove the slow but steady progress toward the mouths of the principal rivers of India — but with the sources of those rivers the homes of the Arian strangers vanish from our sight, even after we have reached the highest points of view accessible on Indian ground.

The countries which the Brahmans took possession of, or rather over which they gained their priestly ascendancy, were inhabited by races of men, who are sometimes represented to us by the Brahmans as mere monkeys or bush-men, sometimes as uncouth giants, sometimes, as in the case of Bribu and Hanuman, as useful allies and faithful servants. In the social scheme of the Brahmans, however, these races could never rise beyond the position of a *Sûdra*. Exceptions like that of the Ribhus or Rathakaras, are very scarce and confined to the Vaidik age. No *Sûdra* again, as long as Manu's laws prevailed, could ever rise to the dignity of a twice-born man, and though even as a *Sûdra*, he had caste, yet the distance between him and the poorest Brahman was so wide and unsurmountable in the eyes of both parties, that we can only explain it by a difference of race, such as we find between the Spaniard and the Negro.

In ancient times the distinction between the twice-born Arians and the *Sûdra* was probably a distinction of c o l o u r also. The very name of caste in Sanskrit is var*ṇa*, colour. Distinctions of colour, however, fade away and sometimes disappear altogether, even in despite of such barriers as the strict "l e x c o n n u b i i," interposed between the different ranks of Hindu society. Besides, these laws were not always observed, nor similarly respected in different parts of India. India was conquered and devastated several times—Greeks, Scythians, Arabs and Mongolians, mingled their blood with that of the conquered race, and as the priesthood and their nobility lost strength, it was easier even for the lowest ranks to claim a position, secured not by birth, but by wealth and power. Again, there is that long interval in the history of India, during which caste, at least in its religious sense, was altogether ignored. As long as Buddhism was the state religion of a great portion of India, that is to say from the third century before, to perhaps the sixth century after Christ, the different ranks of society could only be held apart by social prejudice and custom, and not by priestly authority. But in spite of all these changes and social commotions, the traveller in India to the present day, though he would look in vain for the distinctive features of a Brahman, a Kshattriya, or a Vaiśya, feels the conviction irresistibly growing upon him, as he passes along the streets of cities, or the roads of villages, whether

north or south of the Vindhya, that everywhere he is brought in contact with at least two races of man, distinct in mind as well as in body. "No sojourner in India," says Dr. Stevenson, in the Journal of the Bombay Branch, January 1852, "can have paid any attention to the physiognomy of the higher and lower orders of natives without being struck with the remarkable difference that exists in the shape of the head, the build of the body, and the colour of the skin, between the higher and lower castes into which the Hindu population is divided. The high forehead, the stout build, and the light copper colour of the Brahmans and other castes allied to them, appear in strong contrast with the somewhat low and wide heads, slight make, and dark bronze of the low castes."

The name of "Dekhan languages," to signify the non-Arian dialects of India, is therefore inconvenient in one respect. According to its etymological and geographical meaning, it can only refer to nations and languages to the right of the Vindhya, while we evidently want a name sufficiently comprehensive to stand for all aboriginal inhabitants of India, wherever they are met with, from the Snows to Cape Comorin. Our highest living authority and best informant on the ethnology and phonology of the native races of India, Mr. B. H. Hodgson, of Darjiling, uses "Tamulian" as the general name for all non-Arian races. I have adopted this name, though it is not altogether free from objections, because it may be used in three different meanings. Originally it would mean one of the languages in the Dekhan, the Tamil; secondly, the Dekhan languages in general; and thirdly, all the aboriginal dialects of India. Mr. Hodgson himself uses it in the second and third senses. I should prefer, therefore, as a general name for all the native languages of India, Nishâda-languages. Nishâda is the oldest name given by the Brahmans to their non-Arian neighbours. It means Assiduus or Ansässig, and is therefore the most appropriate name for people who occupied the soil of India, before they were dispersed by the Arians. It is true the word Nishâda does not occur in the Rigveda, but at the time of Yâska, in the fourth century B. C., the "five races," frequently mentioned in the Veda, are always explained as the four castes and the Nishâdas. In the Brâhmaṇas also and in the epic poems, the word occurs as a general term together with Mlekha.

"Tamulic" might, if this were used, be retained as the general name of the languages now principally spoken south of the Vindhya.*

Historical Traces of Nishâdas, or aboriginal Races in India.

On the ethnological state of India during the Vaidik periods, it is very difficult to form a correct opinion, because the scanty allusions to this subject which occur in the hymns are at variance with one another in different portions of the Rigveda. It is a fact, that the four castes existed previous to the collection of the Rigveda;—and

* The materials which I have used are almost entirely contained in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal. I subjoin a list of the articles to which I shall have most frequent occasion to refer:

Vol. 1847. p. 1235. B. H. Hodgson, On the Aborigines of the Sub-Himalayas; p. 1245. B. H. H., Comparative Vocabulary of the several Languages and Dialects of the Eastern Sub-Himalayas, from the Kali or Ghogra to the Dhansri (Suhanshiri?).

Vol. 1848. 1. p. 73. Addenda and Corrigenda of the paper on Aborigines, etc.; p. 544. B. H. H. Ethnography and Geography of the Sub-Himalayas.

Vol. 1848. 2. p. 222. B. H. H. On the Tibetan Type of Mankind; p. 550. B. H. H. The Aborigines of Central India; p. 650. B. H. H. On the Chepang and Kusundu Tribes of Nepal.

Vol. 1849. 1. p. 238. B. H. H. A Brief Note on Indian Ethnology; p. 350. B. H. H. Aborigines of Southern India; p. 451. B. H. H. On the Aborigines of North Eastern India.

Vol. 1849. 2. p. 702. B. H. H. On the Origin of the Kocch, Bodo and Dhimal Tribes; p. 761. B. H. H. On the Physical Geography of the Himalayas; p. 967. B. H. H. On the Aborigines of the Eastern Frontier.

Vol. 1850. 1. p. 309. B. H. H. Aborigines of the North East Frontier; p. 461. B. H. H. Aborigines of the South.

While engaged in carrying this Essay through the press, I had the pleasure of making Mr. Hodgson's personal acquaintance in England, and I received at the same time his two important articles published in the Asiatic Journal of Bengal, 1853, Nos. I. and II.

Besides Mr. Hodgson's articles we find in the same Journal some very useful Essays by W. Robinson. "Notes on the Languages spoken by the various Tribes inhabiting the Valley of Asam and its Mountain Confines," vol. 1849. 1. p. 183. and 310.

Mr. Walter Elliot's Observations on the language of Goands, published as early as November 1847, in the same Journal, are well known, and have been honoured by a translation by Professor Lassen.

The Rev. J. Stevenson's articles are principally published in the Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society.

therefore previous to any other written authority in India, which might be quoted to disprove their early existence. The hymn in the tenth Mandala, where the castes are mentioned with their technical names, though it may have a modern appearance, if compared with other hymns, is still the most ancient authority we can appeal to, and more ancient than any hymn in the other collections, or any Brâhmana or Sûtra. And further the four social ranks, priests, warriors, house-holders and servants, are clearly distinguishable in many of the hymns of the Rigveda, and in the Brâhmanas the Sûdra also is mentioned by name. Though he belongs to a caste, and therefore has rights as well as duties, he is distinctly called non-Arian, for Âryas, as the Satapatha-brâhmana says, are only Brahmans, Kshattriyas and Vaisyas. In addition to these four castes, who formed the body politic in India as early as the times of Vasishtha and Visvâmitra, we find in the hymns frequent allusions to the Dasyus. Dasyu means simply enemy, for instance, when Indra is praised because "he destroyed the Dasyus and protected the Arian colour." The "Dasyus" in the Veda may mean non-Arian races in many hymns; yet the mere fact of tribes being called enemies of certain kings or priests, can hardly be said to prove their barbarian origin. Vasishtha himself, the very type of the Arian Brahman, when in feud with Visvâmitra, is called not only an enemy, but a "Yâtudhâna," and other names which in common parlance are only bestowed on barbarian savages and evil spirits. We still have the very hymn in which Vasishtha deprecates such charges with powerful indignation. He says:

"If I had worshipped false gods, or if I had called upon the gods in vain — But why art thou angry with me, o Gâtavedas? May vain talkers fall into thy destruction."

"May I die at once, if I be a Yâtudhâna, or if I hurt the life of any man. But may he be cut off from his ten friends, who falsely called me a Yâtudhâna."

"He who called me a Yâtudhâna, or who said I am a bright devil — may Indra strike him down with his great weapon, may he fall the lowest of all beings."

In other passages, the word also which I have here translated by devil (rakshas), is clearly applied to barbarous nations. Originally

rakshas meant strong and powerful, but it soon took the sense of giant and barbarian, and in this sense it occurs in the Veda together with Yâtudhâna.

Another Vaidik epithet applied as it seems to wild tribes, infesting the seats of the Âryas, is "anagnitra," they who do not keep the fire. Thus we read, "Agni, drive away from us the enemies,—tribes who heep no sacred fires came to attack us. Come again to the earth, sacred god with all the immortals, come to our libation."

The same races are called "Kravyâd," or flesh-eaters. In a famous hymn of Vasish*th*a we read: "Indra and Soma, burn the Rakshas, destroy them, throw them down, ye two Bulls, the people that grow in darkness. Hew down the madmen, suffocate them, kill them, hurl them away and slay the voracious."

"Indra and Soma, up together against the cursing demon! May he burn and hiss like an oblation in the fire! Put your everlasting hatred upon the villain, who hates the Brahman, who eats flesh, and whose look is abominable.

"Indra and Soma, hurl the evil-doer into the pit, into unfathomed darkness. May your strength be full of wrath to hold out, that no one may come out again."

Kravyâd, flesh-eater, means people who eat raw meat, κρεοφάγοι, and they are also called âmâdas, ὠμοφάγοι, or raw-eaters, for the cooking of meat was a distinguishing feature of civilized nations, and frequently invested with a sacrificial character. Agni, who in the Veda is the type of the sacrifice, and with it of civilization and social virtues, takes an entirely different character in his capacity of "Kravyâd," or flesh-eater. He is represented under a form as hideous as the beings he is invoked to devour. He sharpens his two iron-tusks, puts the enemies into his mouth and swallows them. He heats the edges of his shafts, and sends them into the hearts of the Rakshas. He tears their skin, minces their members, and throws them before the wolves to be eaten by them or by the shrieking vultures. These Rakshas are themselves called "a*k*itas," mad, and "mûradevâs," worshippers of mad gods. Nay they are even taunted with eating human flesh, and are called "asu*t*ripas," as enjoying the life of other men. In the Rigveda, we read, "The Yâtudhânas who gloat on the bloody flesh of men or

horses, and steal the milk of the cow, o Agni, cut off their heads with thy fiery sword."

All these epithets seem to apply to hostile, and most likely aboriginal races, but they are too general to allow us the inference of any ethnological conclusions. The Vaidik Rishis certainly distinguish between Arian and non-Arian enemies. The gods are praised for destroying enemies, Arian as well as barbarian (dâsâ *k*a v*r*itrâ hatam, âryâ*n*i *k*a), and we frequently find the expression, "Kill our Arian enemies, and the Dâsa enemies, yea, kill all our enemies." But there is no allusion to any distinct physical features such as we find in later writings. The only expression that might be interpreted in this way is that of "su*s*ipra," as applied to Arian gods. It means "with a beautiful nose." As people are fain to transfer the qualities which they are most proud of in themselves, to their gods, and as they do not become aware of their own good qualities except by way of contrast, we might conclude that the beautiful nose of Indra was suggested by the flat-noses of the aboriginal races. Tribes with flat or with even no noses at all, are mentioned by Alexander's companions in India, and in the hymns of the Rigveda Manu is said to have conquered Vi-*s*i*s*ipra (Pada-text, visi-*s*ipra), which may be translated by "nose-less." The Dâsa or barbarian is also called v*r*isha*s*ipra in the Veda, which seems to mean goat or bull-nosed, and the "Anâsas" enemies whom Indra killed with his weapon (Rv. V, 29, 10), are probably meant for noseless (a-nâsas), not, as the commentator supposes, for faceless (an-âsas) people.

In the Brâhma*n*as, which represent a new period of Vaidik literature, the Nishâdas occur under more distinct features. In the Aitareya-brâhma*n*a, they are once mentioned in the same category with thieves and criminals, who attack men in forests, throw them into wells, and run away with their goods (Nishâdâ vâ, Se*l*agâ vâ, pâpak*r*ito vâ).

In some of the later Brâhma*n*as also, the Pan*k*avin*s*a, for instance, the Nishâdas occur, and we there find, that they now live not only in forests but in villages. But there also, they are distinct from the castes as well as from the great mass of the people, the latter, though not under Brahmanic discipline, being yet considered as of Arian origin. This latter class, the Vrâtyas, are de-

scribed as differing from the Brahmanic laity in laws, customs, and pronunciation, but not in language. They could be readmitted into the Brahmanic community after performing certain rites and penances prescribed by law. Their name is Vrâtya, but never Nishâda In the Taittirîya-brâhmaṇa, we find after the four castes (Brâhmaṇa, Râganya, Vaisya and Sûdra), other names, such as Mâgadha, Sailûsha, Naishâda, Vrâtya, Kaivarta, Kirâta, Kândâla, etc., but again no description of their physical peculiarities.

This is very different in later works. In the Vishṇu-purâṇa (page 100, ed. Wilson), the type of the Nishâda is given,—"a being of the complexion of a charred stake, with flattened features, and of dwarfish stature." The inhabitants of the Vindhya mountains are called his descendants. According to the Matsya-purâṇa, they were as black as collyrium. According to the Bhâgavata-purâṇa, they had short arms and legs, were black as a crow, with projecting chin, broad and flat nose, red eyes, and tawny hair. The Padma-purâṇa adds a wide mouth, large ears, and a protuberant belly, and particularises their posterity as Kirâtas, Bhillas, Bahanakas, Bhramaras, and Pulindas.

From the most ancient times therefore to the period of the Purâṇas, we meet everywhere with indications, more or less distinct, of two races brought into contact in the Indian peninsula. A most vivid description of their physical peculiarities at the present time is given by Mr. Hodgson. In one of his articles published in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal (1849, p. 710), he writes: —

"A practised eye will distinguish at a glance between the Arian and Tamulian (i. e. Nishâda) style of features and form—a practised pen will readily make the distinction felt—but to perceive and to make others perceive, by pen or pencil, the physical traits that separate each group or people of Arian or of Tamulian (Nishâda) extraction from each other group, would be a task indeed! In the Arian form there is height, symmetry, lightness and flexibility: in the Arian face an oval contour with ample forehead and moderate jaws and mouth, a round chin, perpendicular with the forehead, a regular set of distinct and fine features; a well-raised and unexpanded nose, with elliptic nares; a well-sized and freely opened eye, running directly across the face; no want of eye-brows, eye-lash, or beard; and lastly, a clear

brunet complexion ; often not darker than that of the most southern Europeans.

"In the Tamulian (Nishâda) form, on the contrary, there is less height, less symmetry, more dumpiness and flesh : in the Tamulian face, a somewhat lozenge contour caused by the large cheek bones ; less perpendicularity in the features to the front, occasioned not so much by defect of forehead or chin, as by excess of jaws and mouth ; a larger proportion of face to head, and less roundness in the latter ; a broader, flatter face, with features less symmetrical, but perhaps more expression, at least of individuality ; a shorter, wider nose, often clubbed at the end and furnished with round nostrils ; eyes less, and less fully opened, and less evenly crossing the face by their line of aperture ; ears larger ; lips thicker ; beard deficient ; colour brunet as in the last, but darker on the whole, and, as in it, various. Such is the general description of the Indian Arians and Turanians."

In other places Mr. Hodgson undertakes indeed to give some characteristic marks by which the principal sub-divisions of this Non-Arian, or Nishâda, stock might be distinguished in different parts of India. But though they would suffice to indicate at once the Nishâda in the Dekhan or in the jungles of Gondvân, in the slopes of the Vindhya or in the valleys of the Brahmaputra, in the Tarai or in the Ghats of the Himâlaya, from his Arian neighbour, they are hardly sufficient to separate the Tamulian proper from the Kol, the Kol from the Garo, the Garo from the Lepcha, the Lepcha from the Bhotîya. Mr. Hodgson also, admits, in several places, that, on the whole, there is but one stamp impressed on all the Aborigines of India, that will admit of scientific definition. This stamp, he says, is the Mongolian "Look steadfastly at any man of an aboriginal race (an ubiquitarian Dhanger for instance), and say if a Mongol origin is not palpably inscribed on his face".

Second Section.

Ethnology v. *Phonology.*

Ethnology, therefore, as a physical science, would hardly bring us beyond a general conviction that India is inhabited by two different races of men. Nor should we, in our phonological studies, either expect or desire more than general hints from physical ethnology, The proper and rational connection between these two sciences is that of mutual advice and suggestion, but nothing more. Much of the confusion of terms and indistinctness of principles, both in ethnology and phonology, are due to the combined study of these heterogeneous sciences. Ethnological race and phonological race are not commensurate, except in ante-historical times, or perhaps at the very dawn of history. With the migrations of tribes, their wars, their colonies, their conquests and alliances, which, if we may judge from the effects, must have been much more violent in the ethnic, than ever in the political periods of history, it is impossible to imagine that race and language should continue to run parallel. The physiologist should pursue his own science unconcerned about language. Let him see how far the skulls, or the hair, or the colour, or the skin of different tribes admit of classification; but to the sound of their words his ear should be as deaf as the ornithologist's to the notes of caged birds. If his Caucasian class includes nations or individuals speaking Arian (Greek), Turanian (Turk), and Semitic (Hebrew) languages, it is not his fault. His system must not be altered in order to suit another system. There is a better solution both for his difficulties and for those of the phonologist than mutual compromise. The phonologist should collect his evidence, arrange his classes, divide and combine, as if no Blumenbach had ever looked at skulls, as if no Camper had measured facial angles, as if no Owen had examined the basis of a cranium. His evidence is the evidence of language, and nothing else; this he must follow, even though it be in the teeth of history, physical or political. Would he scruple to call the language of England Teutonic, and class it with the Low

German dialects, because the physiologist could tell him that the skull, the bodily habitat of such language, is of a Celtic type, or because the genealogist can prove that the arms of the family conversing in this idiom are of Norman origin? With the phonologist, English is Teutonic, and nothing but Teutonic, and that because what we may call its soul — the grammar — is Teutonic. Ethnological suggestions as to an early substratum of Celtic inhabitants in Britain, or historical information as to a Norman conquest, will always be thankfully received by the phonologist; but if every record were burnt, and every skull pulverised, the spoken language of the present day alone would enable the phonologist to say that English, as well as Dutch and Frisic, belongs to the Low German branch—this, together with the High German and Scandinavian, a branch of the Teutonic stock—this, together with the Celtic, Slavonic, Hellenic, Italic, Iranic and Indic, a member of the Arian family. The phonologist can detect by himself the ingredients of Celtic, a large admixture of Norman, a considerable infusion of Latin and even Greek in the English of the present day, although he would gladly admit that it frequently saves him time and trouble, if either historian or physiologist have indicated what residuum lies for analysis in his crucible. The same applies to our case. No physiological or historical evidence was necessary to convince the phonologist that the language of India was not one uniform language. Indeed, this difference was observed even before the difference of race had attracted attention, and ethnology was in this case led, and therefore misled, by phonology. The ethnological division of Arian and non-Arian inhabitants of India was at first chiefly based on linguistic evidence. Tribes that spoke Sanskrit dialects were set down as Arian; others speaking a non-Sanskritic tongue were classed as members of the Turanian race. This has led to much confusion and useless discussion. On one hand it was impossible to deny the fact, that in the North of India millions of people speak modern Sanskrit dialects, though their physical type is decidedly Tamulian; on the other no doubt could exist that many of the Brahmans of the Dekhan, now speaking Tamulian dialects, were of Arian extraction. The fact ought to have been stated plainly, for it is a fact to which there are analogies all over the world, and which scholars ought to have been familiar with by the knowledge that the

Normans, who spoke, every man, a Teutonic dialect, when they took possession of the North of France, spoke a Romance dialect, every knight and wight, when they conquered England. Attempts have instead been made to prove that Bengâli and Hindustâni were languages Tamulian in grammar; or, in an opposite direction, that tribes, like those who now inhabit the valley of Asam and speak Asamese, i. e. a Sanskritic dialect, had Caucasian blood in their veins, and were Caucasians modified and deteriorated by the influence of climate and of diet. But although the majority of people who speak Bengali may be of Tamulian extraction, does it follow that the grammar of their language is Tamulian? Or does it follow that the original inhabitants of Asam were Arians, because the language at present spoken in that country is Sanskritic in its grammar? In fact, after Asam was brahmanised in language and thought, it was again conquered by the Ahoms.* These overspread and conquered the country, and now constitute a large proportion of the population. Yet scarcely a single term in present use is traceable to the ancient Ahom, a language closely allied to the Shan and Siamese, and now understood only by a few Ahom priests who preserve their old religion.

There ought to be no compromise of any sort between ethnological and phonological science. It is only by stating the glaring contradictions between the two sciences that truth can be elicited. I feel no doubt that the only natural solution of the problem would have been found and accepted long ago, had it not been for this baneful spirit of accommodation and mutual concessions. Ever since Blumenbach tried to establish his five races of men (Caucasian, Mongolian, American, Ethiopian, and Malay), which Cuvier reduced to three (Caucasian, Ethiopian, and Mongolian), while Prichard raised them to seven (Iranian, Turanian, American, Hottentots, Negroes, Papuas, and Alfourous), it was felt that these physiological classifications could not be brought to harmonize with the evidence of language. Blumenbach's Caucasian race, for instance, was a congeries of at least three phonological races — the Greeks (Arian), Jews (Semitic), and Turks (Turanian). Yet this point was never urged with sufficient strength,

* Ahom is the same word as Asâm. It is said to be the Sanskrit Asama, unequalled, which pronounced according to the Bengali fashion is Asam, according to native pronunciation Ohom or Ahom. Cf. N. Brown's Grammatical Notices.

till at last Humboldt in his Kosmos (I. 353.) stated it as a plain fact, that, even from a physiological point of view, it is impossible to recognise in the groups of Blumenbach any true typical distinction, any general and consistent natural principle. From a physiological point of view, we may speak of varieties of man,—no longer of races. Physiologically the unity of the human species is a fact established as firmly as the unity of any other animal species. So much, then, but no more, the phonologist should learn from the physiologist. He should know that in the present state of physiological science it is impossible to admit more than one beginning of the human race. He should bear in mind that Man is a species, created once, and divided in none of its varieties by specific distinctions; in fact, that the common origin of the Negro and the Greek admits of as little doubt as that of the poodle and the greyhound. No argument, derived from the diversity of language, will shake the physiologist in this conviction; and the phonologist must keep it in view if he wishes to secure his science that honourable place which Humboldt assigned to it, as the connecting link between the physical and intellectual Kosmos.

The interval between the first beginnings of the natural history of man, and the times to which we can ascend through the evidence of language, may be so great as to make it impossible to gather up the threads of the one, and connect them with those of the other period. It may be—nay, if we consider the few facts here within reach of even inductive reasoning, most likely it will be—impossible to strengthen the arguments of physical science in favour of a common origin of mankind, by evidence derived from phonological researches; but it should not be attempted again to disprove the unity of the human race by arguments derived from the apparent diversity of human speech. On one side the phonologist need no longer feel hampered by the classifications of a Blumenbach and a Cuvier *, with regard to

* Cf. Synopsis of the Physiological Series in the Christ Church Museum, p. 2. Dr. Henry Acland defines the relation of physiology and linguistic ethnology (phonology) with exactness and fairness. The crania, he says, will furnish the student with examples of the modification of form of which the human skull is capable. In these forms, sufficient data will not be found for constructing natural groups of the nations; inasmuch as the researches of ethnologists tend to show, with more and more certainty, that these alliances are to be discovered by linguistic investigations alone. But the study of changes which occur in anatomical structure,

his classification of languages; on the other, he ought to bear in mind, that, if it is impossible to trace the convergence towards one common source of all the dialects of the human species, it will be necessary at least to explain the possibility of their divergence, and to account by analogy for the fact of their apparent diversity.

Third Section.

Subdivision of the Nishâda or aboriginal Languages of India.

Accepting for our starting point the general distinction between Âryas and Nishâdas, which, whether suggested by physical features, or proved by the evidence of grammar, may be considered as an undisputed fact, we have now to see if all Nishâdas are really of one stock; and if so, whether they can be subdivided into distinct groups.

"The physical aspect of the Nishâdas," says Mr. Hodgson, in a passage which just catches my eye, "is of that osculant and vague stamp which indicates rather than proves anything, or rather what it does prove is general, not particular." Their linguistic aspect, however, is more satisfactory, and no doubt the evidence to be derived from it will become still more convincing and more distinct if the collections and researches to which Mr. Hodgson has given so powerful a stimulus and so successful an example are continued with an equal zest and in the same spirit. It is, no doubt, a difficult and not always pleasant task to collect words and phrases from the mouths of people whom few would choose for the companions of their studies; but it is a task that promises to reward most amply the labour expended on it. Mr. Hodgson's plan of inviting cooperation all over India is good; but I am afraid he will not find that every "collector" is able to collect words or grammars. Mr. Hodgson's instructions also are practical; but it will require much philological tact, and painstaking scholarship to carry them out successfully. One point, perhaps, ought to be put forward still more prominently. Wherever

according to modes of origin, of life, of climate, and of society, will remain among the most interesting problems in the natural history of man, and of the animals, the co-tenants of our planet.

it is possible (and it should never be impossible), a grammatical outline of each dialect should be given, such as can be deduced from a number of phrases written down and compared with one another. Even the largest vocabulary will not make up for the absence of grammatical paradigms. But if time and leisure are wanting for this more tedious task, let the collection of words, at all events, reach the numbers which Mr. Hodgson originally fixed. The small vocabularies which have lately been published, for instance, of the Kole tribes, are not satisfactory, particularly as they involve a great problem. They hardly indicate, still less do they prove, any relationship between these dialects and any other. With the exception of Uraon and Rajmahal, which seem Tamulic in the narrower sense of the word, the other lists should certainly be re-made.

The chief objection to mere lists of words as proofs of the relationship of languages is felt where we have to deal with tribes whose previous history we have no means of knowing. It is impossible to say whether words collected among one tribe have been adopted from another; and even where we know that a language is mixed, we have no means of determining, without the assistance of grammatical forms, which of the two portions represents the original stock, and which the later additions. If a Brahman came to Europe, and without knowing much of the history and the languages of the continent, collected a number of words in Wales, in London and in Paris, he would no doubt, on his return home, discover a considerable quantity of words identically the same in his Welsh, English and French lists. Or, to take a more extreme case, if he collected words at Bayonne, some from Spaniards, others from Basks, he would here again find the majority of words, which he is likely to ask for, identically the same in both lists.* The differences in some words he would account for as he accounts in his own country for differences between Bengali and Hindustani, and, on a primâ facie evidence, he would feel himself justified in arranging Spanish and Bask as cognate tongues.

* Bask words taken from Latin or Spanish: gorputz, body; dempora, times; presuna, person; arima, soul; bekatua, sin; botua, vote; acceptatcea, to accept; affligitcea, to afflict; mendecoste, pentecost; eliza, church; aingeru, angel; arrosa, rose; artea, art; arrapostua, answer; azucrea, sugar; donceila, lady.

No doubt there are essential words which one nation very seldom adopts from another, such as pronouns, numerals, prepositions and conjunctions. But these again are generally short words, and very liable to corruption. Now, the chances of accidental coincidences, particularly with short words, are much greater than commonly supposed, and it will be useful to bear this in mind where we have to deal with scanty lists. The rainbow, in Georgian, is Iris. This may or may not have been taken from Greek. But the fingers, in Georgian, are called thithi, in Lapponian tiute, in Syrianian tyute, in Italian diti (*i. e.* digiti). Here we have a coincidence, the result of mere chance. Compare, besides, Georgian,

qirili, clamour, and Latin, querela.
didi, great, and Lithuanian, didis.
qeli, throat, and German, kehle.
khata, cat, and Latin, catus.
nawi, boat, and Latin, navis.
suli, soul, and German, seele.
uremi, carriage, and Greek, ἅρμα.
ghwino, wine, and Latin, vinum.
wizi, to know, and German, wissen.

It would be difficult to say, unless we regarded the Georgian as a member of the Arian family, which of these words are taken from Persian, Russian or Greek, and which are the result of accidental coincidence. But let us take languages between which no intercourse can be imagined, such as Mandshu and the classical languages, and the following list will give an idea how far phonetic coincidences may be produced by chance*:—

Mandshu.*	Greek and Latin.
akha, rain;	aqua.
aniya, year;	annus.
toma, grave;	tumulus.
ilengu, tongue;	lingua
sengi, blood;	sanguis
cholo, idleness;	σχολή.
unun, weight;	onus.
koro, care;	cura.
amuran, smitten;	amoureux.
furu, rage;	furor.
ako, not;	οὐκ.
baru, before;	πρό.

* Cf. Von der Gabelentz, Grammaire Mandchoue.

Here we have confined ourselves to a collation of the classical languages; but if we allowed our eyes to wander over the whole surface of spoken languages, if we looked into American, African, Malay, Indo-Chinese and Siberian dictionaries, I believe that there is hardly a word in any language, to which, making the usual allowance for change of form and meaning, some other word might not be found almost identical. I take some instances from Klaproth's Asia Polyglotta: —

Sun,	shun,	Mandshu;	sonne,	German.
Moon,	sara,	Syriak;	sara,	Calmuck.
Star,	choshi,	Japan;	chos,	Ostiakian.
Water,	don,	Ossetian;	dan,	New Guinea.
Mountain,	oros,	Greek;	ura,	Tungusian.
Ear of corn,	agna,	Latin;	agna,	Lapponian.
Nose,	bini,	Persian;	bi,	Chinese.
Ear,	uhr (l),	Chinese;	ohr,	German.
Hand,	kara,	Sanskrit;	gar,	Mongolian.
Cow,	bo,	Erse;	ba,	Tibetan.
Dog,	kyôn,	Greek;	kiuan,	Chinese.
Blue,	kyanos,	Greek;	chiuan,	Chinese.
Egg,	eg,	Jenisseian;	egg,	English.
All,	pan,	Greek;	fan,	Chinese.

It is true that coincidences of this kind are not likely to deceive us long, because they could never run through tolerably full lists of words taken from languages distant in place and relationship. But where we have to unravel a cluster of languages, confusedly mixed, as, for instance, the Albanian, Wallachian and Bulgarian, on the confines of the Greek, Latin and Slavonic areas; or the Asamese, Chepang and Rajmahal on the confines of Sanskrit, Tibetan and Tamulian, it will be necessary to disregard at first all coincidences of words, and look entirely to their grammar.

In India, after the light that has been thrown on its ethnology by the combined labours of men such as Hodgson, N. Brown, Bronson, Robinson, Stevenson, Elliot, and others, we can clearly distinguish now between at least two classes of Nishâdas, the one receding before the stream of Arian civilization across the Vindhya into the Dekhan, the other pouring, at a time not easily determined, through the valleys of the Himâlaya into the north-eastern countries of India. The former class may be called *Tamulic*, in the narrower sense of the word; the latter *Bhotîya*, or *Sub-Himalayan*.

Fourth Section.

The Bhotîya Class.

To begin with the latter, which was recognised by Mr. Hodgson as a distinct class of dialects as early as 1828, there can be no doubt now that it is closely connected with the language of Tibet. Numerals, pronouns, and the terminations, or rather postpositions, which occur in these languages, are frequently identically the same as in Tibetan. As far as the evidence of language goes, no doubt can remain on this point. Nor is it difficult to account for it, whether ethnologically, historically, or geographically.

1. *Ethnological Evidence.*

Ethnologically, the Tibetan character is to be read on the face of all these tribes. "Their physiognomy exhibits generally and normally the Scythic or Mongolian type (Blumenbach) of human kind; but the type is much softened and modified, and even frequently passes into a near approach to the full Caucasian dignity and beauty of head and face; though among the Cis or Trans-Himalayans there is never seen any greater advance toward the Teutonic blond complexion than such as consists in occasional ruddy moustaches and grey eyes among the men, and a good deal of occasional bloom upon the cheeks of the children and women. A pure white skin is unknown, and the tint is not much less decided than in the high caste Hindus; but *all* are of this pale brown or Isabelline blue in Tibet and the Sub-Himalayas, whilst the many in the plains of India are much darker." (Dec. 1847.)

2. *Historical Evidence.*

Historically we can never expect much documentary evidence on the past history of nations who had no literature, no alphabet, no monuments. But an inference may be drawn, as Mr. Hodgson believes, that these Sub-Himalayan tribes were separated from their Tibetan

brethren at least before the introduction of Buddhism from India into Tibet. Indian letters, Indian literature, customs and ideas were carried into Tibet by Buddhist missionaries in the seventh century, and no traces of it are visible in the texture of the Sub-Himalayan dialects. Their own traditions, as Mr. Hodgson affirms, indicate a transit of the Himalaya from thirty-five to forty generations back (1000 to 1300 years); but their original separation may have taken place long before. Some of these tribes have preserved the same names which they have in the Mahâbhârata. The position there assigned to the Kirâtas and Kîkakas is the same which the Kirantis and Kîkakas now hold, and they are no doubt the same people with whom the heroes of the Mahâbhârata, Arguna and Bhîma, are represented as fighting. This point has been admirably treated by Professor Lassen in his ethnological articles in the Zeitschrift für die Kunde des Morgenlandes, and again in his Indian Antiquities. It has been proved that the name Kirâta was known to the author of the Periplus of the Erythrean, and to Ptolemy; and, what is important, this name was known to them east of the mouth of the Ganges and Brahmaputra. The Sabaræ of Ptolemy also are as far east as the Ganges, and they have been identified by Lassen with the modern Saur, the ancient Savaras, i. e. Mlekhas, names expressive of a pale rather than black colour. The physical description of these tribes, as given by the Greeks, agrees with the low Tibetan type, particularly if the Skiratæ of Megasthenes might be identified with the Kiratæ. They had flat noses, or, as Megasthenes likes to say, no noses at all. Certain it is that these low Turanian nomad races are mentioned on the frontiers of India so soon as any of the Arian nations come within historical sight.

In some cases, however, these Sub-Himalayan tribes have preserved a recollection of their former Trans-Himalayan homes — a fact which would seem to point to later immigrations than those which opened the first channel to the Trans-Himalayan population of Northern India. The Limbus for instance, are called Chong by the Lepchas, and the province of Chung in Tibet, south of Lhassa, is said by the Limbus to have been their original country. The Murmis speak of themselves as having at some remote period crossed the Snows, and they maintain that they preserved their language and religion (?) unchanged

since their arrival. A Dewan of the Sikkim Raja, who conversed with Mr. A. Campbell, told him that he crossed the original country of the Murmis on his way from Sikkim to Lhassa. (I. A. S. B. 1842, p. 4.)

3. *Geographical Evidence.*

Geographically we must look upon the Himalaya not as an unbroken chain or unsurmountable barrier to separate the high plains of Asia from the basins of the Indus and Ganges, but rather as mountain gates, opening to the bold adventurer a hundred different passes into the gardens of India. Here also we owe much to Hodgson's genius. His map of the natural divisions of the Himalaya is in truth a grammaire raisonnée of this irregular mountain-utterance. In order to give an idea of its organism in as short a space as possible, we might venture to compare the large mass of mountains between India and Tibet, in the North-East, to a hand with its five fingers expanded towards India. Every interval between two of these fingers marks the basin of one of the four of the principal rivers ot Northern India, and each river draws its feeders east and west from the two ridges by which it is included. The four knuckles would represent the five highest peaks, which are the articulations of five mountain ridges projecting to the plains of India. If we look upon these ridges as the five fingers of a left hand, the knuckles, beginning with that of the little finger, would correspond to the following peaks: —

1. Chumalari 23929, 27° 52′, 89° 18′ (*K*imalhari).
2. Kangchang, 28176, 27° 42′, 88° 10′ (Kan*king*inga).
3. Gosain-than, 24700, 28° 20′ 86° (Gosvâmisthâna).
4. Dhoula-giri, 27600, 29° 10′ 83° (Dhavala-giri).
5. Nandadevi, 25589, 30° 22′ 79° 50′.

Between these five peaks, and included by their rib-like continuations, we obtain the following four river-basins: —

Between 5 and 4, the basin of the Sarayû (Karnali).
Between 4 and 3, the basin of the Gandakî.
Between 3 and 2, the basin of the Kausikî.
Between 2 and 1, the basin of the Tistâ.

All these basins from West to East are successively drained by the Ganges, which takes first the Sarayû, then the Gandakî, Kausikî and Tistâ, with their respective tributaries. The Ganges itself flows from a basin formed on its eastern side by the Nanda-devî, or the thumb, on the western by the Gangâvatâri and Yamunâvatari ridge (25669, 30° 55′, 78° 12′). It has absorbed its western feeder, the Yamunâ, before it reaches the Sarayû. The next basin, after the Gangetic, in the West, is that of the *S*atadru, or Sutlej. It is the first river which is absorbed by the Indus. On the east, the next basin, independent of the Ganges, is formed by the Manasâ, the first river absorbed by the Brahmaputra. With the *S*atadru, therefore, in the West, and the Manasâ in the East, two new systems begin. The sources of these two rivers, the Indus and Brahmaputra, are on the roof of the same hand, which, by its five, or, if we include the Ganges, its six knuckles, forms the sources of the Gangetic system. The courses of the Indus and Brahmaputra are determined by the northern declivity of the watershed between Tibet and India. They run, the Brahmaputra, alias Hladinî or Sanpu, towards the East, swallowing all the waters (Manasâ and Subhansri), on the left side of the Chumalari, or the little finger, and disgorging them near the tropic into the Bay of Bengal; the Indus, towards the West, absorbing the rivers of the Penjab and all the water on the right side of Yamunâvatari, and disgorging them near the tropic into the Bay of Cutch.

The whole length of the Himalaya, from where it is outflanked by the Indus and its tributaries to where it is taken in the rear by the Brahmaputra, is 1800 miles, the mean breadth being ninety miles. Though this proportion would be ill represented by that of the palm to the fingers, there is one feature in the conformation of these mountainous slopes which again it is easy to represent and to remember, by looking at a hand with its fingers slightly inclined. There are three transverse climatic divisions, which Mr. Hodgson established as early as 1847, and which he has since worked out more completely, assisted by Dr. Hooker. Each division takes about thirty miles. The first is called the Upper region from the crest of the snowy range, 16,000 (?) down to 10,000 feet above the sea. The second is the Central region, from 10,000 to 1000 feet above the

sea. The third is the Lower region, extending from 4000 feet to the level of the plains. These three regions, in their gradual decline, correspond in many respects with the arctic, the temperate and tropical zones. The lower region only, which would be the third joint of our fingers, requires and admits a new subdivision, into

I. The sandstone range (Dhuns or Maris);
II. The Bhâver or Saul forests (Jhari); and
III. The Tarai swamps.

It was necessary to give this short outline, in order to explain the position of the Sub-Himalayan races in their relation to Tibet and India. The Upper region of the Himalayas forms the outskirts of Tibet. This country stretches on a level of about 10,000 feet, towards Bucharia and China, and forms a triangular plateau, having for its longest side the whole chain of the Himalayas.

The Upper or Cachar region of the Himalaya is therefore naturally occupied by the Bhotiyas, who extend along the whole line of the Ghats (mountain passes), and with the name, have retained the lingual and physical characteristics of their tramontane brethren. They may be called Bhotîyas, or by more special names, Rongbo, Siena, or Bhotia, Serpa, &c. Their language can be studied by means of the Tibetan proper, and by specimens of the Sarpa dialect.

The Central or temperate regions are distributed among the several Sub-Himalayan races in the following order. Between the Brahmaputra, or rather its tributary the Subhanshiri and the Chumalari ridge, that is to say, within the aqueous system of the Brahmaputra, we meet with the Mishmis, Bors, and Abors, Akas and Dophlas. The next or Tistean basin is the fatherland of the Dijondmaro (vel Dinjong-maro, man of Dinjong or Sikkim?), and of the Pluh or Lhopa, that is Lepcha and Bhutanese. The Koséan basin is the abode of the Kirantins and Limbus. Between the Koséan and Gandakéan basins, we have the high level space of Nepal, peopled by Newârs and Murmis. The next or Gandakéan basin is the seat of the Sunvars, the Gurungs and Magars. The distribution of these tribes, according to the different river basins, is given entirely on Mr. Hodgson's authority. But as most of them lead a very unsettled life, we must not expect to find their names always confined

to the "locale" here assigned to them. Another source of confusion is the variety of synonymous names given to the same tribe by different people. The Lepcha, for instance, whom Mr. Hodgson places in the Tistean basin, occupy, according to A. Campbell*, an extent of about 120 miles, bounded on the west by the Tambar branch of the Kuri, and in the east by the mountains of Bhutan. They are found in Nepal, Sikkim, and about fifty miles beyond the Tistá. They call themselves Lepcha, but are divided into two races, called Rong and Khamba. The latter state, that about 200 years ago they came together with the first ancestor of the Sikkim Raja, from Kham, a province of China, or rather Tibet, while the Rong have lost all recollection of their Trans-Himalayan origin. In a route from Cathmandu in Nepal to Tazedo, on the Chinese frontier, communicated by Mr. B. H. Hodgson, Amir, the interpreter, mentions Khambas and Kumis as Bhotiya inhabitants of Pochuzan, close to the frontier of Tibet and China. The Lepcha have an alphabet, whose character Csomo Korosi pronounced to be not-Tibetan. Their religion, however, is Buddhist.

The Limbus again, whose principal habitat, according to Mr. Hodgson, is the Koséan basin, are found, according to A. Campbell, not only between the Dud-kusi and the Kanki rivers, but, though in smaller numbers, eastwards to the Mechi river, which forms the boundary of Nepal and Sikkim. They exist even in Sikkim, and as far east as the Tistâ. Their name, Limbu, is said to be a corruption of "Ekthumba," and other tribes, the Kirantis, the Eakas (between Arun and Konki), and Rais are sometimes included in the generic term "Limbu." The Limbus are ranged under two great divisions, viz. Hung and Rai, each subdivided into many clans. Their original religion is neither Buddhist nor Brahmanic.

The Murmïs again, of the Gandakean basin, are said to extend west as far as the Mechi, east through Sikkim as far as the Tistâ. They are also divided into several clans.

West of the Gandakean basin, in the basins of the Sarayu and the Ganges, the pure Tibetan type ceases, mongrel and mixed races occupy the central regions, the north-west parts excepted, where the Rongbo or Cis-Nivean Bhotias, the Garhwalis, and the in-

* Cf. A. Campbell, Journal A. S. B. 1840. p. 379.

habitants of Kanáver and Hungrang are said to be of Tibetan extraction, although their language is no longer Tibetan. The principal names of these mixed races northward to Gilgit are Khas or Khasias, Kohlis, Garhwalis, Kakkas, Bambas, Gakars, Khatirs, Awans, and Janjuhs. In the central regions we find also the Domes, the Helots of Kumaon.

In the third or Lower region, the following names occur; the Kocch, Bodo, Dhimal, Mecha, Kichak, Tharu, Denwar, Pallah, Boksar, Hayu (in the central *and* lower ranges between Arun and Konki), Chepang, Kusunda, Durre, Bramho, and other tribes, who alone can live and breathe the malarious effluvia of these swamps and forests without injury to their health. Some of them, as for instance the Tharus, extend westward as far as the Ganges.

4. *Phonological Evidence.*

It is a point of importance to determine whether these tribes all belong to the Tibetic stock. To judge from their outward appearance, particularly in the case of the Chepang, Kusunda, and Haiyus (outcasts in the second and the third regions), they seem to be of Tamulic extraction in the narrower sense of the word, that is to say, resembling in form and colour the aborigines of the plains. But the language of the Chepangs, when carefully collected and collated, proved to be of Tibetic origin. Hodgson found it possible to reconcile the contradiction, and account for the apparent physical differences between Bhotia and Chepang, by the deteriorating influences to which these outcast tribes had been for centuries submitted. As far, therefore, as physical evidence goes, we are free to look upon the darker colour and slender frame of all the tribes inhabiting the malarious region, as marks still reconcilable with their Tibetic origin; and lingual evidence is certainly in favour of this view. If we had mere lists of words, collected among the inhabitants of the lower region, there might still be a suspicion, that where their words happen to agree with the Tibetan, they were, in many cases, adopted. But the little we know about the grammar of the dialects of the third region, is sufficient to show that they belong to the Bhotîya, and not, as has been supposed, to the Tamulic class. If we

take the numerals of the Bodo and Dhimal, and compare them with Tibetan and Burmese numerals, and afterwards with those of the real Tamulians in the south, their coincidences with the latter are of a very general nature, while they agree with the former in such a manner as to leave no doubt about their common origin. The same applies to the pronoun, although here there is a family likeness even between the Tamulic and Tibetic tongues. This general relationship makes it difficult sometimes to distinguish at once the members of every different branch, all finally referable to one common stock. The Tibetic branch stands to the southern Tamulic in much the same relation as the Mongolic to the Ugric. The roots and words may often be the same, but they differ vastly in the degree of grammatical perfection attained by each. The Mongolic has no terminations as yet to express the different persons of the verb, neither have the Tibetan and Burmese. Exceptions like the Nâga dialect of Namsang, where we find the first signs of a verbal growth, are like the Mongolic dialects lately studied by Castrén, where a similar grammatical phenomenon was observed. The Tamulic branch, on the contrary, particularly in its leading dialects, has a system of verbal affixes as complete as the Ugric. Another distinguishing feature of the Tamulic, consists in the loss, or, at all events, in the absence of the intonations common to the Bhotîya and Chinese branch. Mr. Robinson describes four different accents or intonations prevalent in all the languages spoken by the tribes bordering on the valley of Asam, which includes Mr. Hodgson's Garos, Miris, Abor-Miris, and Kacháris, the last being taken as a general name, and comprehending the Borros (Bodos), Hojai-Kacharis, Kochis (Modai-Kochis, Phul-guriyas, and Hermias), the Mechis, Dhimal, and Rabhas. Mr. Hodgson, in his last articles, thinks that traces of musical intonation can be discovered even in more western dialects. None however exist in the Tamulic languages, and it may be stated as a fact, that of real Tamulic grammar, in the proper sense of the word, no trace has as yet been discovered north of the Ganges.

Trans-Himalayan Dialects.

Before we proceed to trace the southern ramifications of the Bhotîya class in India, it may be well to cast a glance on what may be called the Trans-Himalayan dialects of Tibet.

The Trans-Himalayan members of the Bhotîya class of languages do not properly lie within the limits of Indian phonology. They are mostly, however, dialects of that language which forms the type or norm of the whole Bhotîya class, the literary language of Tibet, and as such they have a certain importance for a study of the whole class. It should be borne in mind, that what we call a literary language, is, after all, only one out of many dialects, which politically may have been more successful than the rest, but which linguistically has no more right to be considered the sole representative of one body of living speech than any other of its dialect. Nay, in many cases, though literary dialects may be richer in words, they have been shown to be more reduced in grammar than their less cultivated sisters; and comparative philology has elicited more secrets from the lips of vulgar idioms than from classical writings of literary celebrities. Besides, with regard to Tibet, Mr. Hodgson tells us, that what we, after Csoma de Cörös, consider as the standard of Tibetan grammar, is positively repudiated by the people of Tibet (1853, p. 125.), so that any new collateral light on this subject will be useful and important.

Tibet, bounded in the north by the Kuenlun, in the south by the Himâlaya, is divided again by a third prominent chain, which Mr. Hodgson calls the "Nyenchhen-thangla." This chain, which is partially indicated by Ritter's Nian tsin tangla, is considerably extended by Hodgson, and forms, according to him, the barrier between the north and south, or between the nomadic and civilised portions of Tibet. Between this range and the northern borders of Tibet, we find three large nomad races, the Horpa in the west, the Sokpa in the east, and the Drokpa in the central portion. The Horpa (Ritter's Khor) reach into Little Bucharia and Songaria, where they call themselves Ighurs; the Sokpa extend as far as

the Kokonur and Tangut, and their country is called Sokyeul.* Besides the Drokpa (Brogpa), remain other nomadic tribes known by the names of Kazzak and Chakpa. The general name of these nomads of Tibet is Horsok, in contradistinction to the settled inhabitants of the southern provinces, who are known by the general name of Bodpa.

Some of these nomadic tribes coming into frequent contact or collision with the south, speak the pure Tibetan; others speak dialects. Mr. Hodgson gives a specimen of the Horpa in the west, which is a Bhotîya dialect; while the Sokpa in the east speak a Mongolic idiom. The language of the central Drokpa is not yet known.

Another tract of language, first explored by Mr. Hodgson, extends from the Sokpa on the north-eastern frontier of Tibet, along the confines of Tibet and China, toward the south, as far as Yunan. We have here the Amdoans, the Thochu, Gyarung, and Manyak. The first speak simply Tibetan; the other three speak dialects first collected by Mr. Hodgson. Another language, equally a Tibetan dialect, is spoken by the Takpa (Ritter's Gakpo, Gangpo, and Dakpo), not, however, on the eastern frontier of Tibet, but west of Kwombo, in the central province of Tibet. These tribes, with the exception of the last, are known in Chinese by the general name of Sifan, or western aliens. Finally Mr. Hodgson gives us one dialect spoken in the immediate neighbourhood of the Sifan, the Gyami; and this is no longer Tibetan, but Chinese.

The information which we possess regarding these languages is as yet extremely scanty, particularly with respect to their grammar. The vocabularies published by Mr. Hodgson are here less trustworthy than in other tribes. He says so himself, particularly with regard to the Sokpa and Gyami vocables. Still the linguistic evidence, incomplete as it is, is sufficient to warrant the classification of the Sokpa with the Mongolian dialects. The identity in the

* Of the two lists of words, respectively aseribed to the Sokpa and Horpa, the Sokpa words are Mongolian, the Horpa, Bhotîya. *Sok* and *Sok-bo* is the usual Tibetan name for Mongolian tribes; those who live in Northern Tibet and Tangut, nay all Mongolians between Tibet and the towns of Little Bucharia, call themselves *Sharaigol*, and are sometimes called *Chor* by the Tibetans, *Chor* being given as a synonyme of *Tata* (i. e. Mongol) in the Chinese-Tibetan dictionary of Peking.

numerals is surprising; but in the absence of a complete set of pronouns or pronominal affixes, it is impossible to enter into details. The Horpa language is more ambiguous. By its pronouns and numerals it is Bhotîya, and I have accordingly ranged it with the Trans-Himalayan Bhotîya dialects: forming their most western branch. Mr. Hodgson, however, refers the Horpa to the Turkish family, and he derives his argument "not only from the vocables but from the complex structure of Horpa verbs." The plural termination also, which is riggi in Horpa, sounds like Tataric grammar; for instance, the Horpa gna, I, gnariggi, we; as compared with the Tataric ben, I, and bisigi, we. Nay, the Thochu also, with its plural termination lar, the Manyak with its dur, and the Takpa with its ra, have at first sight a Tataric appearance. But we must wait until Mr. Hodgson will give us all his materials, before these Trans-Himalayan dialects can be classified with anything like safety, and I therefore give my own classification only as provisional and open to correction. Of the eastern languages of Tibet, that of the Amdoans is said to be purely Tibetan. The Thochu, Gyarung, and Manyak dialects are also connected with Tibetan; but again the scantiness of linguistic evidence is such as to make further identifications extremely problematic. The Gyarung, for instance, to judge from occasional instances given by Mr. Hodgson, seems far to surpass the literary Tibetan in grammatical forms. The Gyarung clearly possesses predicative pronominal prefixes, which in the Bhotîya class are confined to some of the Nâga dialects. They are used on the principle of composition represented in my table by *βa*, and, therefore, find analogies in the Caucasus, the Dekhan, and in Sanskrit. Mr. Hodgson points out himself the striking similarity between the Circassian and the Gyarung in the use of these pronominal prefixes, and he contrasts the

Circassian sara (I), wara (thou), ui (he),
s-ab (my father), w-ab (thy father), t-ab (his father),
with
Gyarung nga (I), nanre (thou), watu (he),
nga-pe (my father), na-pe (thy father), wa-pe (his father).

Mr. Hodgson maintains that the same principle prevails in the

Hayu, Kuswar, Kiranti, and Limbu languages of the Himálaya, and in the Uraon, Ho, Sontal, and Gondi tongues of Tamulian India! Unfortunately, he has not published his grammatical outlines of these idioms, which no doubt would throw more light on the intricate problem of the exact relationship of these tongues than pages and pages of mere vocables. As far as our information of these Indian dialects goes at present, I should feel inclined to doubt any connexion between the Gyarung and such languages as the Ho. There is a grammar, by Philipps, of the Sontal language, but it could not be procured for the present Essay. With regard to the Ho language, in which, according to Mr. Hodgson, similar possessive prefixes exist, I can only say, that in Tickell's account of this dialect I looked for them in vain. Tickell gives possessive pronouns, but no possessive pronominal prefixes.

But there are other features in the Gyarung grammar, to which I remember nothing parallel in Tibetan or any other Bhotîya dialects. I give the forms, as well as their explanation, on Mr. Hodgson's authority, who occasionally quotes them in his notes. A verbal root admits of a number of prefixes without any change of meaning. Thus, to go is not only ching, but also yaching, kaching, daching, taching, and naching. These are all used in a present sense. The past is formed by putting ta between the prefix and the root. Thus we get ya-ta-ching, ka-ta-ching, da-ta-ching, tataching, natataching, all in the sense of "I went." Causal verbs are formed by putting sa betwecn the prefix and the root. For instance, zo, to eat; ta-sa-zo, to feed. By using ma instead of the first prefix, we get a negative verb. Thus, ma-ta-ching, I went not; ma sa zo, I did not feed. Sometimes, we are told, two or three indifferent prefixes may be used, for instance, da-na-ra-gyuk, instead of simple gyuk, to run. The causal form of this would be again da-na-ra-sa-gyuk, to cause to run; and from this again the negative, ma-da-na-ra-sa-gyuk, not to cause to run. This a kind of grammatical mosaic of which one should hardly have expected a Bhotîya language to be capable. But, on the other hand, it cannot be said to be Turkic; because there the verbal root always maintains its place at the beginning, and though it allows a number of suffixes, in some cases even the same as those in Gyarung, at the cnd of

words, on the contrary, it excludes most rigorously any prefixes. The same applies to Burmese and its cognate tongues. They are full of modifying verbal suffixes; but the only verbal form which admits of a prefix is the negative, formed by ma. Thus, in Burmese, thwa, to go, forms its causal, thwa-za, cause to go; its past, thwa-bhu-the, I went. Its negative, however, is, ma-thwa-bhu, he goes not.

A more complete grammatical analysis of the Sifan and Horsok tongues will be invaluable for determining the frontiers between Chinese, Mongolic, Tataric and Bhotîya dialects; and there is reason to hope that Mr. Hodgson will continue his researches in this direction. With the present evidence we must be satisfied to know that, besides the literary Tibetan, many dialects continue to be spoken, particularly in the north of Tibet, which in their vocables are related to Tibetan, and through it to the Sub-Himalayan idioms. The Sokpa dialect, however, seems to form an exception, for we can hardly be mistaken is treating it as a Mongolic dialect introduced into Tibet from Mongolia by nomadic tribes.

Fifth Section.

Further Extension of the Bhotîya Class, and its Subdivision into Sub-Himalayan (Gangetic) and Lohitic Dialects.

After this somewhat unsatisfactory survey of the northern members of the Bhotîya family, we return to India, to trace there the further spreading of the same speech south of the Himalaya. One imaginary barrier, which seemed to separate the languages of the second and third regions of the Sub-Himalayans, and which constituted the Kocch and Dhimal Tamulian, in contradistinction to the Tibetan immigrants, such as Limbu, Murmi, &c., has already been removed. These two groups of dialects once comprehended by one general title (Bhotîya), it will be easier to advance another step, and to include within the same class, many of the tribes of Asam

and Burmah which have been considered of Tamulic or of Taï origin. If the Kachari dialects are once admitted to be Bhotîya, and not Tamulic, the Burmese also cannot be kept separate, and with it all its cognate tongues, such as Singpho, Naga, Mikir, Abor, &c., have to follow. They are all non-Tamulic, and non-Taï. They show none of the features which are peculiar either to the cultivated or the uncultivated Tamulic dialects, either to Tamil or Gond; and where they seem to share in a common expression with the Tamulic or Taï idioms, it must be explained by that more distant relationship which once united all the members of the Turanian family, but which has left such few and solitary traces, that we frequently hesitate whether to treat them as the result of accident or of a primitive community.

It has been said that in Turanian philology neither numerals nor pronouns were of much weight to prove the relationship of languages, and that therefore the principles of comparative philology which are applicable to the Arian languages would have to be modified in their application to Turanian dialects. This is true only to a certain extent. It is true that it would be impossible to prove the common origin of the Tataric and Finnic, for instance, by means of their numerals and pronouns *alone*. We must admit that the fertility of the Turanian idioms continued after their separation, even with regard to these the most simple parts of speech. We have only to look at the Samoiedic and Mongolic numerals, and compare them with the Finnic and Tataric, in order to appreciate the truth of this remark. But though the numerals in all these languages are less useful for the purposes of generalisation, they are most advantageous for the purposes of subdivison. The Tchuvashian, for instance, formerly considered a branch of the Finnic stock, and arranged together with the Tcheremissian and Mordvinian, shows distinctly by its numerals that it belongs to the Tataric branch, to which it has accordingly been referred. In the same manner a comparative list of numerals is sufficient to show that the Kachári dialects do not, as at first classified, belong to the Tamulic stock, but to the Bhotîya. This is confirmed by an examination of their grammar, even with so slight a sketch as that given by Robinson of the Kachári dialect. Nothing, indeed, shows the

peculiar relation of the Tamulic and Bhotîya languages so distinctly as their numerals. They are instructive in two respects. We may learn from them in how high a degree the different classes of the Turanian family possess that independence, and that power of creating new forms and new words, which in some cases obliterates almost entirely all traces of their common origin. But we learn, at the same time, that in smaller spheres these dialects are as tenacious of their common words as any members of the Arian family. The grounds on which the general relationship of Turanian languages can be proved will always lie in the general principles of their grammar, so different from the grammar of both the Semitic and Arian nations. But the mass of languages which on such grounds would have to be referred to one family, is too unwieldy for any scientific purposes. They require to be divided again, to be classified and arranged so as to form an organic and well articulated whole. It is here that pronouns, numerals, grammatical peculiarities and irregularities assume their highest importance.

The Bhotîya languages, even after their separation from the Tamulic class, require a more accurate subdivision; but the materials are hardly sufficient as yet to enable us to pronounce definitely on this point. I shall first give a list of all the languages, which, together with the Burmese, must be included within the limits of the Bhotîya class. Afterwards I shall attempt to show that though they all form but one class, in the most general sense, they cannot be treated as such in the same sense in which, for instance, the Tamulic dialects are all but varieties of one common type.

1. *Lohitic Dialects.*

Geographically, the languages which we have here to consider, and which, with the exception of the Burmese, have been all collected from the mouth of uncivilised tribes, might be called Lohitic, in contradistinction to the former division of Bhotîya languages, which might very properly be designated by the name of Gangetic instead of Sub-Himalayan. Lohita is another name for Brahmaputra in Sanskrit; only it is used here in a narrower sense, as the name of the Yaru or Sanpu after its entrance into India. Under this geographical deno-

mination, however, the dialects now spoken in the third regions of the Himalayas also will be comprised. Although Kocch tribes are scattered at present along the Tistean, and Koséan, and Gandakean basins, and included, therefore, within the limits of the Gangetic system, their proper aqueous habitat and source seem to be in the system of the Lohita, on both sides of the valley of Asam ; and there the majority of these tribes yet resides. One stream of Bhotîya population would seem to have reached India by way of Utsang, following the trans-nivean feeders of the Ganges; the other by way of Kham, following the course of the Lohita and its Indian tributaries, which east of the Chumalhari are kept, by the watershed formed by that ridge from falling into the Ganges. These races extended toward the East into Burmah, and toward the West along the Tarai, Saul, and Mari regions of the Gangetic system. That here their dominion, in times within the reach of historical memory, extended considerably toward the South, is proved by the Kocch-kingdom, which was absorbed by the Company in 1773. Its limits were from 25° to 27° North lat., and from 88° to 93½° E. long., Kocch Behar being its metropolis. The Gangetic tribes also, as we saw before, must formerly have extended much more to the South, if we may identify with the present Kirantis the Kirrhadas, whom Ptolemy recognized on the Bay of Bengal. One of the ancient names of the Ganges is Kirâti.

The first language spoken in the valley of the Lohita is the Asamese, a sister-dialect of the Bengali, and therefore of Arian extraction. That it is a sister, and not a daughter, a collateral formation, and not a corruption of Bengali, has been proved by the Rev. N. Brown, in his excellent Grammatical Notices on the Asamese Language.

With the exception of the Asamese, all other dialects spoken east of Bengal constitute a separate class, of which the Burmese is the only language which has been fixed and regulated by literary cultivation. As a political language, it is now the language of Burmah Proper, and as a medium of political transactions used by the Mons of Pegu and by the Mugs of Aracan (annexed 1825), and wherever the supremacy of the Burmese conquerors was once acknowledged. Previous to the foundation of the Burmese empire the language of the

Myamma* was but one of the innumerable dialects spoken in the peninsula of the Irâvatî (pronounced Eráwadi), many of which have maintained themselves up to the present day, owing to the peculiar character of the country, which in its intricate mountain ranges affords safe refuge to races fond of independence in speech and customs. Even the Burmese, however, though a literary language, is liable to the most violent dialectical corruptions. The word for "say," pronounced r a k in Aracan, is sounded like Y e t by the Burmese; r i, the word for water in Aracan, sounds y e in Burmah. The Burmese consider an indistinct pronunciation fashionable, and always "chew betel and spices while speaking." The changes which Pali words adopted into Burmese have undergone may give an idea of the ravages to which their own words are liable: —

Sanskrit v y a*n*g a n a,	consonant.	Burmese,	b y i.
k a k r a,	wheel; (Pali, *k*akka)	„	j e k and je or tse.
m â r g a,	road; (Pali, maga)	„	m a g.

It seems, on the whole, that the pronunciation in Aracan is more correct and distinct than in Burmah Proper. The Rukheng race, as Leyden says (As. Res., X., 222.), is admitted to be of the same radical stock as the Barmas or Birmans, and is understood to have greatly preceded that nation in civilization. The Barmas, indeed, derive their own origin from the Rukheng, whom they generally denominate Barmakyi, or the great Barmas, and they consider the Rukheng the most ancient and original dialect of the Burma language. It would therefore be of much greater utility to the philologist.

It is impossible to enumerate all the small tribes whose names have been collected by travellers and missionaries. Captain Gordon alone collected not less than twelve dialects in the neighbourhood of Ma-

* Myamma or Bomma, or Byamma, is the Burmese pronunciation of Marumma, the national name of the Rukheng race. The Rukheng vel Aracanese are considered as the ancestors of the Burmese. As Aracan is a corruption of Rukheng, Burma is a corruption of Marumma, which again is said to be a corruption of the Sanskrit Mahâvarma, the honorary title of Kshatriya races. Mug is a name given to the inhabitants of Rukheng by the Bengalis. Rukheng is originally the name of the country, and derived from the Pali word Rakkhapura (abode of demons); the classical name of the country is Dhanya wati.

nipura: the Manipuri, Songpu, Kapwi, Koreng, Maram, Champhung, Lahuppa, North-Tangkhul, Central-Tangkhul, South-Tangkhul, Khoibu and Maring dialects, some of them spoken by not more than thirty or forty families, yet so different from the rest as to be unintelligible to the nearest neighbours. I shall only endeavour to indicate the localities of those tribes whose languages have been comprehended in the lists at the end of this letter. The principal authorities I follow are again Mr. Hodgson and the Rev. N. Brown. With regard to grammatical questions, Mr. Robinson's articles are of the highest value. Short outlines of grammar, like those given by him, for various tribes inhabiting the valley of Asam and its mountain confines, will be indispensable if we wish to arrive at anything like definite results on the phonology of the country between India and China.

Tribes which have already been mentioned as inhabiting the malarious districts of the third Himalayan region, and which will have to be included within the Lohitic class of Bhotîya languages, are, starting from Govalpara in Asam, and proceeding as far as Aligang in Morang, the Kocch, Bodo, Dhimal, Rabha, Hajong, Kudi, Batar or Bor, Kebrat, Pallah, Gangai, Maráha, and Dhanuk. Of most of these tribes we know only the names, but the three first have been made familiar to all ethnologists through a very able treatise by Mr. Hodgson. The kingdom of the Kocch once extended in the West to the Konki, which joins the Ganges near Rajmahâl. Their proper name is said to be Kavaśa, prakritised into Kocch. They are called Hâsa by the Kacharis of Asam, Kamal by the Dhimals, and Kocch by the Mecch. In Asam they are divided into Kamthali and Madai or Shara, and Kolita or Kholta. The mass of the Kocch people have become Mohammedans, and the higher grades Hindûs; both style themselves Rajvansi. Few only adhere to the language, creed, and customs of their forefathers, so vividly described by Hodgson. The language of the unconverted Kocch has not yet been published.

The northern and eastern skirts of the Kocch country are inhabited by Bodo and Dhimal. The Dhimal are to be found as far west as the Konki; their numbers are small, and they are generally mixed with the Bodos. These are very numerous, and extend eastward

to the Dhansri (Subanshiri?), or even beyond, and occupy besides a large proportion of Central and Lower Asam. They are also called Kachâris, and Borros, which probably is the same word as Bodos. Their principal *locale* is said to be Chatgari, where they amount to about 30,000 souls. The whole number is estimated at between 150,000 and 200,000, which includes the Mechis of the West, and the Kacharis of the East and South. Sometimes Kachari is used in a more general sense, comprising the Hogai Kacharis of the plains, the Kochis (including Modai Kochis, Phulguriyas and Hermias), the Mechis, Dhimals and Rabhas. Hodgson has given lists of words of the Bodo and Dhimal; Robinson a grammar of the Kachari dialect, which is the same as Hodgson's Bodo. Robinson's Kachari words were supplied by Captain Gordon.

If we can trust the traditions of the Kacharis, their ancient name was not Kachari, but Rangtsa, and the country from which they came was situated north-east of Asam. They are said to have conquered the old kingdom of Kâmarûpa, and to have founded there the royal Dynasty of the "Ha-tsung-tsa." This Ha-tsung-tsa Dynasty was expelled again by the Ragas of Kocch Behar, and maintained itself in Hirumbha alone to 1130. Now, as in the twelfth century, at the commencement of the Ahom Dynasty in Upper Asam, Kamarûp was already in the hands of Kocch-Behar princes, the Kachari Dynasty may have been founded, as the Kachari chiefs assert, about a thousand years ago. Captain Fisher, who collected this information during his residence in Kachar, also asserts that the few remaining traces of the former religion of the Kacharis resemble the system of Confucius more than anything else. Brahmanism was introduced into Asam in the sixteenth century, but in Kachar Proper, or Hirumbha, its diffusion commenced not more than sixty years ago.

The Garos also are sometimes classed with the Kacharis, with whom no doubt they are closely allied physically and linguistically. They live, however, in a completely savage state: occupying a triangular extent of mountainous country between the left bank of the Lohita and the Khassia Hills. Garo words published by the Rev. N. Brown and Mr. Hodgson, the grammar by Robinson.

The Changlo, who are only known by Robinson's researches, occupy a portion of the northern frontier of the valley of the Lohita,

extending from the Binji Duwar to the confines of the Kuriapára Duwar. Their northern limit is unknown. Changlo in their language means black. Their grammar has been published by Robinson.

The Miris seem to have their chief seats in the low hills north of Banokotta and Lukimpur, whence they were pressed into the plains of Asam by their formidable neighbours, the Abors. Grammar published by Robinson; words collected by Robinson, and another list by the Rev. N. Brown of Sibsagor, published by Mr. Hodgson. Robinson's Miri numerals coincide more with Captain Smith's Abor Miri, than with those dictated by a Miri, at Sibsagor, to N. Brown.

The Miris are said to resemble the Karens (see page 379.) more than any people in the valley of the Brahmaputra. According to Mr. Cutter, their dress is precisely the Karen. They live in small villages in high raised houses like the Karens, but never stop more than a year in a place. They are scattered along the banks of the river from Bisnath up to Sadiya, and some distance up the Dihing. They speak the language of the Abors, a numerous and powerful race, inhabiting the highest ranges of mountains on the north bank of the Brahmaputra, between Jorhat and Sadiya.

The Abors or Bor-Abors occupy an extensive range of mountainous country along the southern exposure of the Himalaya chain, reaching, it is said, as far as Tibet and China. They are to be found on each side of the river Sampu. Of them we have only lists of words, published by Robinson, after materials furnished by the Rev. N. Brown; and by Mr. Hodgson as Abor Miri words, from a vocabulary by Captain E. F. Smith. The lists do not exactly coincide. The Rev. N. Brown gives specimens of a language called Aka, and closely connected with the Abor. The language of the Mishimi also, spoken east of the Abor country along the Sampu, has been examined by the same active missionary. It consists of three dialects, and is connected with Abor and Aka languages.

The territories of the Singphos extend from the Patkoi range to the Lohita, and from the frontier of Asam to the Langtang mountains in the east. Singpho is the language of extensive tribes occupying the northern portions of the Burmese empire. The grammar is published by Robinson, with the assistance of the Rev. M. Bronson. Lists of words are given by Mr. Hodgson after a vocabulary published

by the same. According to Mr. Robinson, one-fourth of the vocables in Singpho are allied to the Burmese, and an equal proportion to the dialect of Manipur. As a dialect of the Singpho, the Jili language is mentioned by the Rev. N. Brown. This tribe was driven out of their seats by the Singpho, and is now nearly extinct.

The Dophlas inhabit the southern face of the Himálaya from 92° 50′ to about 94° north latitude, which forms the northern boundary of the valley of Asam, from the Kuriapára Duwar to where the Subanshiri debouches into the plains. They call themselves Bangni, men. —Grammar and vocabulary published by Robinson. (J. A. S. B. 1851. p. 126.)

The Mikir occupy a tract of hilly country situated within the boundaries of the district of Nowgong (New-village) in central Asam. Numerous families are scattered in the south of Asam.—Grammar and vocabulary published by Robinson.

The Nâga tribes are most difficult to localize. They are divided into many branches and scattered over a large extent of country. Robinson circumscribes their habitat on the west by the Kopili river, the great southern bend of the Barak and the eastern frontier of Tipperah, in nearly east longitude 93°; on the north, by the valley of Asam; on the east and south-east, by the hills dividing Asam from the Bor-Khamti country in longitude 97°, and the valley of the Kyendrens; and on the south, by an imaginary line nearly corresponding with the 23rd degree of north latitude. Their name "Nâga" seems to have been given to them by the Brahmans. Their own name is "Kwaphi."

The Namsangiya-Nagas occupy the hills near the sources of the Buri Dihing river. Their grammar and vocables have been published by Robinson with the assistance of the Rev. M. Bronson. Of other Naga tribes we have vocabularies only. Two taken down by the Rev. N. Brown from two Nagas at Nowgong, and published by Mr. Hodgson as Nowgong and Tengsa Nága. Four more were published afterwards from the same sources. Of them the Mithan or Tablung Nagas reside on the hills east and north of Sibsagor. Their neighbours the Jabokas and Banferas speak nearly similar tongues. The Kharis descend upon the plains near Jorhat. The Angamis occupy the southern end of the Nâga country. The Nâga tribes are

scattered, but not migratory like the Kacharis and Kukis. The latter, called also Kunjye, are generally reckoned as Nâgas, but differ from the Nâgas in customs and appearance. The Kukis are not robbers only, but murderers by profession, and they are accused of cannibalism. Another name of the Kukis is Lunkta, i. e. naked, and the name of the Nâgas is likewise explained as if derived from the Sanskrit "Nagna," naked.

The last contributions towards the phonology of these countries consist in vocabularies of languages spoken by the tribes in Arakan (vel Rakheng), collected by Captain Phayre *, and published by Mr. Hodgson. They contain no grammatical outlines. The geographical position of these tribes is here laid down according to Captain Phayre's indications. Ra-khoing-pyi, or the country of Aracan, lies between 20° and 21° 10′ N. lat. on the sea-coast; in the interior it extends to about 21° 40′.

The Khyeng live in the high range of mountains called Yuma, separating Aracan from the valley of the Irâvatí. They seem to be the same as Dr. Buchanan's Kiayn, only that according to him they term themselves Kolun, but according to Captain Phayre, Shyu. Karieng or Karayn also seem to be mere variants of Khyeng, r and y being frequently interchangeable in these dialects.

The Karens have lately attracted much attention by their embracing Christianity with high zeal and earnestness. The labours of the American Baptist missionaries seem to have met with a success hardly precedented in the annals of missionary enterprise. I take the following notices from an interesting memoir by a Karen missionary, "The Karens, or Memoir of Ko Thah-Byu, Tavoy, 1843."

The Karens have well-defined traditions of being comparatively recent emigrants in Tavoy. They say, "The elders said, we came down from the upper country. At first we settled on the Attaran; next we came to Ya; and finally to Tavoy." Though their dialects, as spoken at Tavoy and Maulmain, differ, the Karens on Belu Island at the mouth of the Salwen, are said to speak precisely the same dialect as that of Tavoy.

All Karen tribes seem to agree that they have not been long in

* All Arakanese are termed Mugs by the people in India, although the Mugs are only a very small race in Aracan, and not of pure Myam-ma descent.

Siam, nor are there any Karens in Siam except on the western side of the Meinam. There are but few in Aracan, and these confined to the southern province of Sandoway. The valleys of the Irrawaddy and Salwen bear the most distinct traces of their gradual progress. But beyond this, all is tradition, which points, however, to Tibet as the original home of the Karens.

I quote a very interesting and important testimony from a work by Mr. Kincaid. The result of all my inquiries, he says, is that Kakhyen is only another name for the Karens. All these mountain tribes, through the whole extent of the Shyan country, and further north into Tibet, are called Kakhyens, except in the Hukong valley, between Mogaung and Asam, where they are called Thing bau-Kakyen. The whole mountain country between Mogaung and Cathay is inhabited by the same people. Around the Martaban gulf, and thence inland as far as the Burman population has ever extended, the mountain tribes are called Karens. Between Rangun and Tung-u, and between Tung-u and Ava, they are very numerous: also between Tung-u and Monay, a Shyan city, about 250 miles east of Ava. There are some tribes scattered along between Burmah and the Shyan states, called Karen-ni, red Karens, and these extend as far as Zimmay. These are less civilized than those who live in the vicinity of Burman cities. Some have erroneously considered them as belonging to the Shyan family. Their language and everything else pertaining to them is Karen. In addition to this, the south-east part of Tibet is inhabited by Ka-Khyens; at least I have reason to believe so, as the Shyans, who live in the most northern part of Burmah, and adjoining Tibet, call the country, "the Kakhyen country." This is partly confirmed by Malte Brun, who, arguing from the accounts of Marco Polo, says, "Thus the country of Caride is the south-east point of Tibet, and, perhaps, the country of the nation of the Cariaines, which is spread over Ava. It will be seen, then, that these mountain tribes are scattered over a vast extent of country, and their population is estimated at about five millions."

"Tin," the Chinese appellation for the Divinity, exists in Karen poetry as the name of a false god, whom they regard as worshipped by a people with whom they were formerly in contact.

The similarity of the Karens and the Miris has been mentioned before, and in a vocabulary of seventy words published to illustrate the language of the Miris and similar tribes, about fifty, with slight modifications, were found in one or other of the Karen dialects. Their country extends from about the 19° to the 20° N. lat.

The Kami (vel Kimi) and Kumi are two divisions of a race inhabiting the hills along the river called Kuladan (limit of the Kulas or foreigners?) by the Aracanese, Ye-man by the Kamis, and Yan pan by the Kumis. The Aracanese distinguish the two tribes as Awa Kumi and Aphya Kumi. They are tribes pressing onward in a south-western direction. They inhabited formerly the seats now held by the Khyeng, and drove the Mru out of the country which they themselves now occupy. The Kami language has been reduced to writing by the Rev. Mr. Stilson, of the American Baptist mission.

The Mru (vel Myn, vel Tung Mru) driven westward by the Kami, now inhabit the hills on the border between Aracan and Chittagong. According to the "Ragavansa," the history of the Aracanese kings, the Mru were in the country when the Myamma or Burmese entered, and one of their tribe was king of Aracan in the 17th century.

The Sak (vel Thock) inhabit the eastern branch of the Nauf river, and are called Chatn and Chanmas by the Bengalis.

There is another curious tribe, called Lung-khe, first mentioned by Lieutenant Phayre in his account of Arakan. They live on the upper course of the Kuladan, and generally west of that river. They are sometimes called Boung-ju. (Bunzus?) Both Lungkhes and Boungjus, it seems, were conquered, and are now governed by a third tribe, called Shindus by the Kumis, but by themselves Hling-ju. Their chief, Leng-Kung, who was examined, shortly before he was poisoned, by Lieutenant Phayre, gloried in his descent from that powerful tribe whose seat is N. E. of the Lung-khes, and whose country is fifteen days' journey in extent. He said that the Lung-khe and Shindu languages are nearly alike. Perhaps we have a specimen of this very language in Captain Tickell's article on the Heuma or Shendús (J. A. S. B. 1852, p. 207.). Their country is placed by Captain Tickell between lat. 22° and 23° N., and long. 93° and 94°. Some of the particulars mentioned by Leng-kung of

the Shindus, and by Lebbey of the Shendus, agree. Both bury their dead, while the Kumis burn them. The Shendu, according to Lebbey, make their houses of timber; the poorer classes only, of bamboo. The Shindus build their houses entirely of plank; nay, Leng-kung declared that there were no bamboos in the Shindu country, a fact doubted by Captain Phayre. The Shendus and Shindus thatch with grass. Both infest the neighbourhood of Chittagong. The names of their clans, however, differ, and there are other facts mentioned which make it doubtful whether the Shendus are really identical with the Shindus. The Shendus, for instance, are stated to buy salt; the Shindus manufacture it from brine-springs in their own country.

Other tribes are mentioned by Captain Phayre, such as the Daingnak (speaking a corrupt Bengali), Moung, and Khyau, but no vocabularies for them have as yet been published. The only addition to our knowledge of these dialects is a list of words of the Tung-lho collected by Dr. Morton, and published by Mr. Hodgson. The Tung-lho live in the Tenasserim provinces, and were recognised at once by Mr. Hodgson as dislocated aborigines driven to the wilds, or as broken and dispersed tribes like the Khyeng, Kami, Kumi, Mru and Sak of Aracan. Leyden also knew that the Tanengsari, or language of the Tanaserim districts, denominated Tinnaw by the Siamese, is only a rough dialect of the common Burmese.

2. *General Coincidences between the Sub-Himalayan (Gangetic) and Lohitic Divisions of the Bhotîya Branch.*

If it be asked why all these dialects from the Tistâ to the Irâvatî are referred to one class, I can here only point to their numerals for an answer, and to the comparative lists of words given in Mr. Hodgson's last articles. The grammatical genius also of these dialects, so far as it can be discovered from the scanty grammatical outlines of a few of them, is uniformly the same. The system of accents or intonations is common to all, and, with the exception of the Nâga dialects, none distinguishes the persons of the verb by either affixes or prefixes. In some of these idioms, the meaning of words,

whether nouns or verbs, is modified by additional syllables placed at the end of the substantive or the root, while the persons of the verb have no such distinction. The actual coincidences in the expressions for gender, number, cases, and verbal derivatives are numerous, but it would require too much space here to place them in their proper light. I shall only mention a few which are, of course, restricted to those dialects of which Robinson has given us grammatical outlines. But, judging from the general similarity of words between all, I believe that the same remarks will be found to apply to the other dialects belonging to this class of which as yet we possess vocabularies only.

Gender in all Lohitic and Sub-Himalayan (Gangetic) dialects, with the exception of foreign terms, is expressed by separate words, and is always restricted to the expression of natural sex. The usual terms for male and female are p a and m a (nya), though other expressions occur, and in some dialects p a and m a are restricted to a certain class of animals. For instance :—

Tibetan :	phag, pig ;	phag-p o, male ;	phag-m a, female.
Changlo :	kurta, horse ;	kurta-p h o, „ ;	kurta-mo, „
Garo :	achak, dog ;	achak-bip h a, „ ;	achak-bim a, „
Kachari :	;	bi-p h a, father ;	bi-m a, mother.
Miri :	eki, dog ;	ki-baka, male ;	ki-n e k a, female.
Singpho :	gui, dog ;	gui-l a s a, „ ;	gui-n u m s a. „
Naga :	hui, dog ;	hu-p o n g, „ ;	hu-n y o n g, „
Mikir :	kipi, a monkey ;	kipi-a l o, „ ;	kipi-a p e, „
Burmese :	ngan, a goose ;	ngan-h p a, „ ;	ngan-m a, „

I have given the list complete, in order to show the rule as well as the exceptions. It is also necessary to remark, that, with the exception of the Tibetán, where it is said that p o and m a may be prefixed as well as affixed, all other dialects invariably place these words expressive of gender at the end.

Another general feature of these dialects consists in forming the plural by an affix expressive of plurality. Now, as the idea of plurality admits of a much larger number of expressions than that of gender, it is natural that there should be a greater variety in the plural affixes of the same idioms. Two, the Singpho and Mikir, are said to exclude all expression of plurality ; the Singpho, for instance, can only say a p a n a n g (many) a r l e n g (man), in order

to express the plural. It should be observed, however, that both Singpho and Mikir have plural affixes for their pronouns. Now, with regard to the syllables employed to express plurality, we find dag in Tibetan, thamcha in Changlo, and ki-ding in Miri. Tibetan and Changlo both employ nam; and Garo and Miri coincide in another plural affix, rang and arang. This rang seems to be the same as the Aracanese ro; and as the Burmese cannot pronounce the *r*, their do may come from the same source, though generally a Rukheng *r* corresponds to a Burmese *y*.

With regard to the case-terminations, or rather the post-positions fixed upon to express the relation of noun to noun, it is extremely difficult to institute comparisons. There are no fixed cases, such as genitive, dative, ablative, and the same post-position has adopted a variety of meanings in various dialects. As by in English may mean near to or by means of, and therefore correspond to a locative and to an instrumental, the same particle in these Lohitic dialects is sometimes made to serve opposite purposes. Still even here coincidences are not wanting if we examine carefully the paradigms given by Robinson. What is called, for instance, the instrumental, is expressed, in Tibetan by kyi,

Changlo by gyi,
Garo by chi,
Miri by koki,
Burmese by si.*

With respect to adjectives, it may be observed that in all these dialects, with the exception of the Burmese, they are either usually, or in some, invariably, placed after the word they serve to modify.

* I cannot help thinking that in some cases these post-positions, although they form part of the grammar, are words taken from Sanskrit or Asamese. In Asamese, parâ, a Sanskrit word, is used as an ablative post-position. In Mikir, the sign of the ablative is para; in Kachari, phraï; in Burmese, phraen. Now, that in Burmese Sanskrit post-positions are used becomes almost palpable in the case of kraun. Kraun is in Burmese the sign of the instrumental and the ablative. Both might be expressed by the Sanskrit karana, cause, means; and in Asamese, karane is actually used as an instrumental post-position. But the same kraun in Burmese is used as sign of the infinitive, and there again the Sanskrit karana, which originally means "doing," would be in its proper place. Coincidences like these can hardly be accidental.

Tibetan:	mi ngam,	man bad,	(optional).
Changlo:	aba changlo,	crow black,	(general).
Garo:	mande nama,	man good,	(always).
Kachari:	manse gaham,	man good,	(optional).
Miri:	amie aïda,	man good,	(always).
Singpho.	singpho kunkan,	man idle,	(always).
Naga:	asan koa,	milk good,	(always).
Mikir:	aso kangtuk,	boy fat,	(always).

3. *Distinctions between Sub-Himalayan (Gangetic) and Lohitic Dialects.*

But though it must be admitted that these Lohitic dialects form one class, it might be asked on what grounds they are to be separated from the Gangetic dialects on the north-west, and from the Taï dialects on the south-east. With regard to the latter, the answer will be given when we come to the Taï dialects. As to the distinction here proposed between the Gangetic and Lohitic dialects, I admit that it is more or less provisional, and that in any case I should always look on these two streams of language as sprung from the same source. Both have a right to the general title of Bhotîya, and their connection with the language now spoken in Tibet is transparent throughout. But these two streams must have reached India at different times, and having been exposed for centuries to various influences, may thus have grown into two separate dialects like the Ionian and Æolian dialects of Greece. I said before that words can only indicate general relationship, and that for the purposes of systematic arrangement we must rely on pronouns, numerals, and grammatical features. Unfortunately, we have no grammatical outlines of any Gangetic dialect, and we are obliged, therefore, to fall back on numerals and pronouns. Now, with regard to the pronouns, there is one well-marked feature to keep the Gangetic apart from the Lohitic class. The pronoun of the second person in all the seventeen Lohitic dialects of which specimens are available begins with *n*. In the Gangetic dialects the initial letter is an aspirated guttural, with the single exception of the Magar, and perhaps the Murmi. A feature of this kind, where we can hardly suppose a merely phonetic corruption as the cause of difference between the pronoun

of the Gangetic and Lohitic dialects, would be sufficient in Arian philology to shake our confidence as to the common origin of these two classes of speech. This need not be, where we have to deal with Turanian dialects. For in them even the pronouns, in other respects the most abstract and therefore most firmly settled parts of speech, are affected by that lingual superfetation which likes to express by two and more words the different aspects even of the most simple ideas. Some Turanian languages revel in a variety of pronominal forms shading them according to the light in which they look upon the person addressed, or wish to be looked at by him. Some of these pronouns are only ceremonial expressions; others, however, have become real pronominal bases. In the case before us, we find that the Chinese, which is a model of pronominal politeness, possesses two real bases for the pronoun of the second person, one consisting of the dental nasal, the other of the aspirated guttural: the former, ni, being used in the Kuanhoa; the latter, ghou, in the ancient Kuwen.

The numerals in the Lohitic and Gangetic dialects do not disguise their common origin. Their pronunciation no doubt varies considerably, but it never exceeds the bounds of analogy. In both classes, but more particularly in the Lohitic, the numerals have been encumbered with prefixes and affixes, which sometimes distort the features of the original numerals to an extent that renders their appearance entirely different. Still here also, analogy helps us to separate what is additional from the primitive root. These various changes, whether produced by corrupt pronunciation or by additional syllables known as "generic particles," make it impossible to discover any broad features by which a set of Gangetic could at once be distinguished from a set of Lohitic numerals. If the Tibetan and Burmese numerals could be used as types and representatives of the two classes, Gangetic and Lohitic, it would be easy to point out characteristic distinctions between the two. But if we look at the variations to which both the Tibetan and Burmese numerals are liable, in the endless ramifications of their living progeny, or rather of their kin, what seemed at first characteristic and distinguishing marks of the two, disappear again before the general likeness of the whole family. I have no doubt, however, that a more

intimate acquaintance with the grammar of the literary language of Tibet and Burmah will enable other scholars to discover the distinguishing features of these two languages in those ruder dialects also which are spoken between India and China, and which, though they may ultimately flow from the same fountain-head, have undergone considerable modification in their respective courses.

Sixth Section.

Taï Branch.

§ 1. *Survey of Taï Languages.*

There is another class of languages spoken on the confines of Eastern India and Western China, which might be passed over as foreign to our present inquiry, if some of the dialects belonging to it had not been mixed up with the Lohitic class. In so vast a subject as that of the Turanian family of speech, we must guard most carefully against confusion, which will necessarily arise unless we succeed in subdividing this large domain of philology. Now, with regard to the Taï languages, it can not be denied that by their roots they cling to the same soil from which the Bhotîya, or the Gangetic and Lohitic, dialects sprang. But as we distinguish in a tree between its roots, its trunk, its stems and branches, we must try to do the same for language. No scholar would compare Sanskrit and Italian, Celtic and Hindustani, although ultimately they can be traced back to the same origin. Still less could the Nâga dialects be classed with Khamti, as Mr. Robinson proposes. For if it be a peculiar feature in the Taï languages, that they are monosyllabic and destitute of inflections, surely the Nâga dialects are the very last to be brought under the same category. Mr. Hodgson, therefore, was right when, in his lists of words, he kept the Khamti distinct from the Nâga dialects, and his correspondent,

the Rev. N. Brown, declares emphatically that he does not even believe in any very close radical connection between Khamti and Burmese. "This affinity," he says, "seems always to have been taken for granted, as a matter of course, but without any just ground. It is true there are a considerable number of Burman words in the Khamti, but they bear the marks of recent introduction, and are not to be found in the old Ahom, the parent Shyan, nor in the Siamese, with which the Ahom was nearly, if not exactly, identical."

The languages which belong to the Taï class, and interest us with reference to their Lohitic neighbours, are the Siamese, Ahom (Shyan), Laos, Khamti, and Kassia. The Siamese language was formerly, and is still called Sayama phasa, or the Sayam language, sayam being, according to Bishop Pallegoix, the same as the Sanskrit *syâma*, brownish, which is said to be the original name of Siam. Shyan seems to be a corruption of this name. But the same language is more frequently called phasá thai, which means "language of Free-men," a name which the Siamese assumed after shaking off the yoke of Kamboja. Hence the whole class of these dialects has received the general title of Taï or Taïc languages. This title may seem not very appropriate, considering its original meaning. But as it has already become a usual term, it may be retained for the present. Most of these languages have alphabets of their own. There is a Khamti and Shyan alphabet, both derived from the Burmese; and a Laos alphabet, derived from the same source, but better adapted to the wants of the language; and the Siamese alphabet, also related, but more distantly, to the Burmese. A comparative table of these alphabets, promised by Mr. Robinson, has not yet been published.

The Rev. N. Brown has first drawn attention to the curious contrast between the Nâga and the Taï dialects. While the former exhibit an extraordinary exemplification of the manner in which an unwritten language may be broken up even upon a small extent of territory, the great Taï family offers a not less striking instance of the preservation of language, in almost its original integrity and purity, through many centuries, and in spite of a vast territorial diffusion. For from Bankok to Sadîya, along the Menam, Salwen, Irawadi, and Kyendwen rivers, up to the sources of the Irawadi,

through 14 *degrees of latitude*, there is but one language, notwithstanding the diversity of governments under which the speakers live.

The discrepancies between the Khamti and Siamese, spoken at the two extremities of this linguistic area, seem to be very trifling. Nine-tenths of the fundamental words, according to the Rev. N. Brown's calculations, are the same in these dialects, with the exception of slight variations in pronunciation.

The localities of the Taï languages mentioned above are known with tolerable accuracy. While the Lohitic languages seem to spread in a southern direction, the Siamese dialects have at present rather a tendency toward the north. The Siamese conquered Asam. The proper name of these conquerors was Shyan* (or Shan), but the conquered nations gave them the name of Ahom (the Sanskrit asama), which in Asamese means "unequalled." What is called the Ahom language is now nearly extinct. Though the present Ahoms of Asam, the descendants of the conquerors, still form one of the largest portions of its population, they have relinquished their language and their religion for that of the Hindus. The Ahom is now understood only by a few Ahom priests who still preserve their old religion.†

The Khamti is the most northern branch of the Taï family. Its position among Lohitic dialects becomes intelligible if we suppose that the Khamtis were driven northward by the same impulse which brought the Siamese as conquerors into Asam. Though separated from the Ahom, it is only through it that the Khamti can be historically linked to the Siamese, to which no doubt it belongs linguistically.

The same applies to the Kassia (or Khyi) language, which is spoken in the mountain territory surrounded in the north by the valley of Asam; in the west by the Garo hills; in the south by the district of Sylhet; and in the east by Kachar. Of the Kassia we have a grammatical sketch by Mr. Robinson. Captain Fisher, in his Memoir of Sylhet, says that their language exhibits no affinity with any of the languages of the neighbourhood, but that a people resembling the Khyi in some particulars formerly occupied a position on the south bank of the Brahmaputra, at Measpara, where they were

* N. Brown's Grammatical Notices, xxvi. † Ibid., p. iv.

called Mek, and that these came originally from the frontiers of Butan and Nepal.

As the conquerors of Asam were Siamese, we may understand how the ancient Ahom came to be so closely allied to the Shyan or Siamese. According to the Rev. N. Brown, the Ahom was nearly, if not exactly, identical with the Siamese. Grammarians distinguish between a vulgar, a high, and a sacred dialect of the Siamese. The vulgar dialect admits but few foreign words, from Chinese, Malay, Lao, and Kamboja sources. The high and sacred dialects are full of Sanskrit and Pali words, changed according to the genius of the Siamese tongue. It is extraordinary how, after this exposition, Bishop Pallegoix, the author of a Thai grammar, could maintain that the Thai and Lao languages derived their origin from two Brahmans who founded the town of Sangkhalok in the year 150 Phra Khodom, i. e. 393 B.C. The language of Siam is surrounded by five or six different classes of language. In the west it is included by the Burmese and cognate Lohitic dialects. At the northern point its frontier line touches the Arian territory, the Asamese. Hence, turning round toward the east, it comes in contact with Gangetic dialects, while the whole eastern frontier is formed by the Chinese and Cochinchinese languages. The most southern limit of the Siamese touches the realm of the Malayan speech, while the language of Pegu, the Mon*, the south-eastern neighbour of the Siamese, is still of unknown origin.

The name of Laos on our maps, in the interior of the country between the Menam and Mekhong rivers, indicates the locality of the Lao language. The language is only known by collections of words, which are very like the Siamese. It is a language rich in literature, and a country full of relics of a former civilisation and Buddhist hierarchy.

* A list of words given by Dr. Morton, of the Mon or Talien, shows coincidences with Kamboja words from the Mekhong river. The Burmese and Siamese both affirm that the Mon language has no affinity with their own speech.

§ 2. *Relation of the Taï to the Lohitic Languages, and their Connection with the Bhotîya Class and Chinese.*

We have now to consider some of the grammatical features which are peculiar to these languages, and by which they are held together as a class, and kept distinct from their Lohitic neighbours. The materials available for this purpose are small. There are lists of words of all of these dialects; but it is only of the Khamti, the Kassia, and Siamese, that we possess grammatical outlines, and those again but very slight.

If there are languages which can properly be characterised as monosyllabic, this title may be applied to the Taï languages. Certainly the Bhotîya dialects, whether Gangetic or Lohitic, cannot lay claim to this title, though it is usually bestowed on them. If from a Burmese root or a base, "kung," which means good, or to be good, we may derive a-kung, good, kung-khyeng, goodness, and kung-than, good — we cannot call a language like this monosyllabic. If monosyllabic means only a language which by a more or less difficult analysis can be reduced to monosyllabic elements, then Sanskrit is monosyllabic also. But if it means a language in which the speaker feels every syllable as a distinct sound, expressive of a distinct meaning, then I doubt whether even the Chinese can be called entirely monosyllabic. No languages, however, come nearer, or, I should say, no dialects are less removed, from the Chinese status of grammar than the Taï languages.

The system of musical accents or intonations, though it exists in the Gangetic and Lohitic* dialects also, is said to be much more

* Mr. Hodgson (1853. p. 128) says, the principle of the tonic or accentual variant has most erroneously been supposed to be exclusively Chinese and Indo-Chinese, whereas it prevails far and wide, only more or less developed; most, where the servile particles and so-called silent letters are least in use; least, where they are most in use; so that the differential and equivalent function of all three peculiarities—that is, of empty words, of silent letters, and of tones —is placed in a clear light.—The language of Nepal Proper is remarkable for its numerous tones and its scanty servile, whether literal or syllabic. According to the Rev. N. Brown, Chinese distinguishes eight, the Taï languages five or six, the Karen five or six, the Burmese three accents. In the modern Chinese, as, for instance, in the dialect of Shanghai, eight tone-accents are observed.

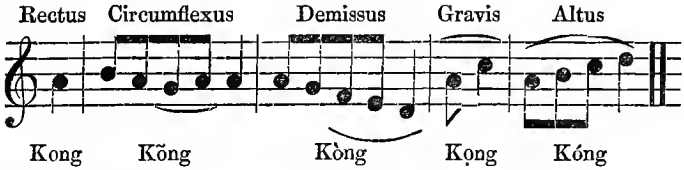
marked in the Taï class. This would be so of necessity, because these dialects abound in sounds organically the same, but expressing ideas totally different. In Khamti, for instance,

ma with the rising tone signifies *a dog*,
ma with the falling tone signifies *to come*,
ma with an abrupt termination signifies *a horse*.

In Siamese, khai, as it is pronounced with different intonations, may mean, who?, egg, fever, to open, rough, camp, to sell. The number of accents in Siamese is fixed at five, tonus rectus,* circumflexus, demissus, gravis, and altus.

This system of accents, however, by no means excludes the possibility of composition. We are apt to imagine that as long as every syllable has an accent of its own it remains independent, and does not enter into composition. This is true with regard to our accent, which is of a logical or etymological nature; but it does not apply to accents like those in Chinese and Siamese. The Chinese themselves distinguish between full words (shi tsé) and empty words (hiu tse). These empty words, although they have an accent, have no independent meaning of their own, but determine and modify the meaning of other words. The same applies to Chinese compounds. Here also, two words form but one logical idea. Cé "gin is not tongue + man, but man of the tongue, i. e. an interpreter. "Gi tsé is not sun + son, but the son of the sun, i. e. day. Discarding compound and polysyllabic words, which the Siamese have borrowed from the vulgar Sanskrit, the Pali, or the sacred language of the Buddhists, we find even Siamese words joined together to express one idea. For instance, nam chai, water (of the) heart, *i. e.* will; kan suk, opus belli, i. e. bellatio. Abstract words

* The accents are thus represented by Pallegoix in musical notation:



Leyden compares the modulation of these accents with the chanting of the Samaveda in India.

are formed by prefixes expressive of "heart," "matter," etc.; and in a similar manner substitutes are found to express approximately number, gender, and case. However, Siamese, no doubt, may be called monosyllabic in the only sense in which any human language can be so, in so far as it shows very few traces of compounds in which one part has entirely lost its original form and meaning. In this sense the Taï languages are monosyllabic, and the Lohitic are not.

There are other fundamental principles by which the grammatical system of the Taï differs from the Lohitic dialects. We saw that in the Lohitic dialects all words expressive of case, number, and gender were put at the end of words. It is just the contrary in the Taï languages, so far as known to us. Gender only may form an exception, because it may be expressed by an adjective, and the adjective in the Taï, as well as in the Lohitic dialects, follows the substantive. Thus ma in Khamti is horse; ma-thuk, a stallion, ma-me, a mare; miau, a cat; miau-thuk, and miau-me, a male and female cat. In Kassia, however, gender is expressed by prepositive particles; for instance, u-tanga, husband, ka-tanga, wife; u-kapa, father, ka-kami, mother.—Number, where it is expressed at all, is expressed by prepositive words. In Kassia the plural is expressed by the preposition ki; for instance, sing. u-mon; plural. kimon. In Siamese the plural is expressed by a prefix, meaning many. Bishop Pallegoix, in his Thai grammar, gives a complete paradigm of a declension in Siamese. In it all cases, with the exception of the vocative, are expressed by prepositions. It is the same in Robinson's Kassia and Khamti grammars, and we find there that all other local, or temporal, or causal relations, which in the Lohitic dialects are invariably expressed by postpositions, are here rendered by a large array of prepositions.

A grammatical feature like this marks the family-likeness of the Taï languages better than even the striking similarity of their numerals; and it establishes the more distant degree of relationship between the Taï and and Lohitic dialects, indicated, though less distinctly, by the variations to be observed with regard to the numerals in each class. Numerals as well, if not more even than other words, are exposed to phonetic accident and fluctuation which,

in the absence of historical documents in these Eastern dialects, will hardly ever be reduced to the same rules as the phonetic changes of the Arian languages. We have only to compare lists of words collected among identically the same tribes by different persons, in order to convince ourselves what vague and unmanageable materials we have to deal with. In Siamese, r and l are said to be pronounced like n in the close of a syllable; ma and ba, tya and chga, are often of difficult distinction when pronounced, as are ya and ja, kyé and chyé. We saw before how mangled an appearance Sanskrit words have if adopted in Burmese. The same applies to Sanskrit words in Siamese. We should hardly recognise in the adventures of Pram and his brother Pra-lak, and in their wars with Totsa-kan, who carried off Nang Seda, the stories of Râma, Lakshmana, Dasakaṇṭha and Sîtâ. Nor would the Buddhists of India easily discover their Buddha Siddârtha, and Suddhodana in the Bugda, Theik-dhat, and Sugdo of the Siamese. It is on account of the phonetic vagueness of these monosyllables, and also on account of the strange corruptions to which words taken down auricularly are exposed, that I abstain from giving long comparative lists. There can be no doubt that many identifications of Gangetic, Lohitic, and Taï words, given by Buchanan, by Leyden, and more recently and completely by Mr. Hodgson, are true. But still they are only persuasive, not convincing. Is it possible, in the present state of our knowledge, to discover the foreign words adopted in one or all of these dialects, if we consider the great changes to which, as we have seen, these foreign words are liable? And still more difficult it is to say, in each case, whether a Siamese word which we compare with a Burmese may not have been taken simply as a foreign word by one of the two languages, instead of belonging to that common Turanian stock of words from which all these dialects originally descended.

It will be an interesting problem, to be solved hereafter, how far the Chinese contains, in its most ancient and best authenticated form, the radical elements from which the Bhotîya, as well as the Taï languages, branched off at different periods. Unfortunately, Chinese civilisation has so powerfully reacted on these languages, in periods within reach of history, that it will always be extremely

difficult to ascend on safe ground to ante-historical times, in which alone a radical community between these idioms and the Chinese could have existed. The numerals hold out a strong hope that the problem will be solved in the affirmative; the pronouns also contain similar indications. But principles will first have to be established by which we can tell foreign and adopted from natural and common words in these dialects. We can tell in French whether a word was taken from Italian, or whether both French and Italian derived it from Latin. The same will have to be done for the Taï, Lohitic, and Gangetic dialects, in their relation to Chinese. The use of prepositions in the Taï declension, and of postpositions in the Lohitic declension, are unmistakeable signs of different stages of grammatical growth respectively attained. They are features as distinct as the use of prepositions and articles in the modern Romanic languages contrasted with the final terminations in Sanskrit or Greek. Grammatical features of this kind must serve as landmarks in the linguistic survey of these countries, and as eras in the historical arrangement of their growth and diffusion.

I subjoin a few instances of similar words in the Chinese, Burmese, and Tibetan, in order to show that they deserve attention, though I quite agree with what Schleiermacher says of them in his Grammaire Barmane, "de telles comparaisons de mots monosyllabiques isolés présentent toujours beaucoup de vague." The question is whether, according to the nature of the case, we have a right to expect more definite proofs.

Chinese, nêng Burmese, nhain	posse.
Chinese, chĭ Burmese, *si*	scire.
Chinese, chă; Canton, chăt Burmese, *sat*	occidere.
Chinese, chè Burmese, *sœy*	removere.
Chinese, nieoû Burmese, nuah	bos.
Chinese, ko Burmese, khu	affixum numerale, aliquis.
Chinese, tchi, ti Burmese, *si*	particula possessiva; genitive.

Many more words might be added, particularly if we compare the Chinese spoken nearest to India,—I mean the Chinese of Canton,—with Siamese, Burmese, and the spoken Tibetan. But who could say, in each individual case, whether the following words, for instance, are ancient common words in Burmese, Siamese, and Chinese, or whether the one language borrowed them from the other?

I. Chinese.	II. Burmese.	III. Siamese.	IV. Tibetan, spoken.	V. English.
ngu,	ngâ,	—	gua,	fish.
foö,	—	fâi,	—	fire.
syuk,	kyiowk,	—	—	stone.
ngunn,	ngwe,	ngun,	ngui,	silver.
thong,	—	thong kham,	jhang chep,	brass.
yâ (evening),	nya,	—	—	night.
chew,	—	chaw,	—	morning.
yun,	—	khon,	—	man.
fu (hu),	pha,	pho,	pha,	father.
mu,	ma,	me,	ama,	mother.
akko,	ako,	—	—	elder brother.
amui,	umma,	—	—	elder sister.
thow,	—	hua,	go,	head.
ngi,	na,	—	na (Changlo),	ear.
li,	—	lin,	li (Chango),	tongue.
khuok,	khye,	—	kang pa,	foot.
thú,	—	(phung) thong,	phou,	belly.
kie,	—	kin,	ja,	to eat.
teko,	di hu,	—	di,	this.
koko,	ho hu,	—	kho (he),	that.

For the most striking coincidences I should always point to the numerals. Their similarity cannot be denied, and their common origin can hardly be doubted. To suppose that the Taï dialects borrowed their numerals from the Chinese, the Gangetic from the Taï, and the Lohitic from the Gangetic dialects, would be in the teeth of all phonological analogy, and I doubt not, that in Turanian as in Arian philology, the numerals will turn out after all to be the first indisputable ground for establishing the claims to a common descent for the languages of India extra Gangem.

Bhotîya and Taï Numerals.

There are two things which we must bear in mind in looking at the compartive table of the Taï and Bhotîya numerals, including under the latter term the Gangetic and Lohitic dialects.

It is true that, with the exeption of the Taï idioms, which agree better in this respect than any two dialects of Greece or Italy, they do not offer at first sight very striking coincidences. But we must remember, first, by whom these numerals were collected; secondly, by whom they are used. They were collected by men, not always familiar with the sounds which they tried to write down and translate into the Roman alphabet. It is very difficult to catch the mere sound of a language, if we do not understand its meaning; and if two travellers in foreign countries endeavour to write down the words uttered by the same individual, their phonetic sketches are likely to vary as much as two portraits taken under different effects of light.

In two lists of the Kuki numerals, we find katka=keaka; nika=panika; like=ta; rungaka=nga; ruka=koo; and in all these cases, I believe, the same sound was meant to be represented. Ka is one of those generic numeral affixes which attaches itself to all the Kuki numerals, but may be suppressed if other words follow. The word for "one," I suppose, therefore, to be k a t; but t before k becomes obscure,—as, for instance, in the Burmese name of a magistrate, which Judson writes Sit-kai; Cox, c h i k o y; Symes, c h e k e y; and it is the same in octo and otto. Hence katka=keaka. In panika=nika, p a can be proved to be an usual numeral prefix. In lika=ta, we have one of the frequent instances where the strong aspirated l has been mistaken for a t, while in other cases the same sound is represented by an rh, or d, or zh. In Burmese, for instance, t h y o and r h o, pronounced s h o, are all the same word for to wash. In runga=nga, the r u is simply the guttural arsis which naturally precedes the deep n g a, but was not meant to be sounded separately. The same applies to r u k a vice k o o. The greatest difficulty consists in catching the sound of final letters. In Burmese, as Schleiermacher (§ 31.) says, "on est souvent hors d'état de distinguer si c'est un p ou un t qu'on entend prononcer;" and the same grammarian

writes (§ 26.) with regard to the final *k*, that a k is sounded like a k or a t. We need not be surprised, therefore, if the Limbu word for one is written t e e k by Campbell, and t h i t by Mr. Hodgson. On the other hand, we must also take into account the status of the people who speak these languages. Some are brought in contact with civilisation, whether English, Chinese, Hindu, or Burmese, and in their commercial transactions have to use foreign terms. Thus it happens that tribes who possess numerals of their own, prefer to show their knowledge of the Hindustani numerals, when they are questioned on the subject by an English official.

Among themselves, also, the most powerful and governing race probably exercises a certain influence on the languages of subject tribes, and in their bartering transactions Burmese numerals, for instance, would form a common medium between distant hordes subject to the Burmese government. Again, many of these tribes migrate, some are conquered and carried off into slavery. The language of the conquerors has to be learnt by the conquered, who again in turn conquer their conquerors and retaliate on them.

Lastly, the numerals in all these languages are known to have this peculiarity, that they change according to the object numbered. In Burmese n h i t is two; but

two men, is lu (man) nhit-yauk,
two fowls, is kyet (fowl) nhit-gaung,
two pagodas, is tsadi (pagoda) nhit-chu.

In Kachári these determinative syllables are prefixed. When numerals are applied to human beings, the particle s a is prefixed to the numerals; when applied to other animals, m â; to inanimate objects, t h a ï; to trees, p h a n g; to articles enumerated by pieces, g a n g. For instance, m a n s e s a n a i, two men; b u r m a m a b r e, four goats; p h i t a i t h a i r o, six fruits.

In Mikir, again (where the simple numerals only go as far as six, thorchi, 7, being thorok 6+ichi 1; merkep, 8=10−2; chirkep 9 =10−1), the word b a n g is prefixed when individuals are enumerated; j o n when inferior animals; h o n g and p a p when inanimate objects. For instance, a t e b a n g h i n i, two brothers; j o n p h o n g o a c h o r o n g, five cows, i. e. piece-five cow. The same applies to

Khamti and Siamese, and to the Malay, where these generic particles are put at the end of the numerals. In Malay, for instance, êkor means tail, and is used as a generic exponent for cattle. Sa=one, kerra=monkey; one monkey=sa êkor kerra. Lîma=5, kûda, horse; five horses=kuda lima êkor. Now, some of these suffixes and prefixes, if used frequently, and particularly if deprived of their original meaning, coalesce with the numerals. In this manner we must account for long being added to all Dhimal numerals, for sh and shi at the end of the Limbu numerals, for zho in Chepang. In Miri, ko is affixed and a prefixed. The Shendus prefix me, the Gyarung ka; the Manyak affix bi, the Gyami ku. In other cases we find some numerals with, others without suffixes; sometimes we are told that this suffix must be dropped if a substantive follows, sometimes that another suffix must take its place. All these changes are based on one and the same principle of determinative syllables, which in monosyllabic languages are for the speaker what determinatives are for the writer in Egyptian and partly in Chinese.*

After these preliminary remarks, we may venture to trace some of these numerals to their original form and common type. We shall meet with extreme cases, such as, for instance, Nâga vanram, three, being the same as Miri aomko, three. But we know that va or van in Nâga is a prefix, as well as a in Miri; and we also know that ko in Miri is an affix. This leaves us ram=om. Now, the r in vanram or vâram stands between two vowels, where, as, for instance, in the name of the Burmese capital, Amaapuya, i. e. Amarapura, it is dropped in pronunciation. Hence ram and om, both preceded by a vowel, are the same, and so are their secondary forms, van ram and aomko.

We may at once proceed to a consideration of the other words for three, and take "two" afterwards; because "three" is common to the whole class, while "two" will help us to distinguish the Taï from the Bhotîya class. The original type of "three" in these languages was "Sam." Sum, som, san, sun, son, sang, sung, song, are simply varieties of the same sound. This brings together Chinese, all the Taï (exc. Kassia), eleven Gangetic dialects, and one Lohitic. Making allowance for the evanescent final nasal (as in Uraon and

* See Humboldt's Complete Works, vi. p. 402.

Urao), we may include Horpa and Angámi Nâga; and considering the difficulty of distinguishing between the four names of the frontier river between the English provinces and Burmah, (it is written San-luen, Salwen, Saluoen and Thalueyn,) we may also include the words with initial th (hts, shy). Thus we embrace the Shan, Burmese, Bodo, Khyeng, Mru, Sak, Tunglhu, and with t=th, the Kumi t u m. In composition we have still to make allowance for s being changed into r, r into l, or its being dropped altogether. The phonetic process of these changes is well known from Sanskrit and other dialects. We now take the prefixes:

With ka, we have, Gyarung, k a-s a m. Mikir, k a-t h a m.
Kami, k a-t u n.
gi, Garo, g i-t h a m.
a, Dophla, a a m. Abor, a n g o m (i. e. a-ong).
Nâga, a z a m and a s a m.
ma, Singpho, m a s u m. Shendu, m e-t h a s.
van, Naga, v a n r a m.

With suffixes we have—
k u: Gyami, s a n k u. Kuki, t u m k a.
r i: Thochu, k s h i r i.
b i: Mangak, s i b i.
s h i: Limbu, s y u m s h.
y a: Kiranti, s u m y a.
z h o: Chepang, s u m z h o.
l a n g: Dhimal, s u m l a n g.

With suffixes and prefixes—
a-k o: Miri, a|u m|k o. a o m k o.
a-a: S. Miri, a|u m|a.

Thus, out of fifty-four dialects, there is but one, the Kassia l a i, which resists classification, though here the Nâga l e m might serve as a link. Even if the value of these comparisons could be tested simply by phonetic similarity, if the common origin of these numerals was simply a question of phonetic possibility, I should think even then the chain of changes which connects the Chinese word for t h r e e with all the rest less complicated by far than that by which Professor Bopp has tried to connect the Caucasian s e m i, s u m i, s a m i, j u m, with Sanskrit t r a y a s.

I do not attempt a comparison of the words for one, for reasons stated above, though the number of independent radicals to express one, is not so great as might be expected. The same applies to the words for two. Here also the power of forming new words, such as couple, pair, brace, has not been carried to a great extent; and in its limited operation it becomes useful and instructive, because it assists us in establishing lines of demarcation between the Taï, and the other dialects. The type for two was NYA, with a decided tendency, however, towards the vowel *i*. The softened or mouillé sound of ny, is sometimes expressed by gn, sometimes by ng; nh also seems intended to indicate the same sound. In other dialects this mouillé letter becomes evanescent, and the simple nasal only remains. It may seem doubtful whether instead of NYA, the original form might not have been NYAT. Several forms occur with a final t. But as there are other forms with a final s, it seems more plausible to look on both t and s as additional letters, though their occurrence in distant dialects may be taken as a sign that this additional consonant dates from an early period. After these remarks, seventeen dialects can be traced back to nya or nyat, without affix or prefix. The affixes and prefixes used in the other dialects are the same as for "three." The only new ones are kching in Changlo, and pan in Khyeng. Anomalous forms are Kiranti, hasat, Nâga, ih, Miri, pre. It is important as a distinction that the Taï dialects have their own word for "two," which is the same as "three," only with a final guttural nasal, sang, instead of the labial nasal in sam (three). We may conclude from this that the separation of the Taï dialects from the common stock took place previous to the separation of Tibetan and Burmese. A third base for "two" is ar in Gyami and Kassia; it may be connected with the Chinese eul.

The original base of "four" was "Chi," a sound which in these dialects is sometimes palatal, sometimes lingual, sometimes subdental, accordingly as it is produced by bringing the tongue in contact with the palate, the root of the teeth, the gum, or the teeth, without, however, allowing it to become a pure dental or a pure guttural sound. From chi this sound may pass to zhi, and from zhi it may run into a soft s. It may also approach a lingual *d*, and then merge into the lingual *r* and *l*. Similar changes have been pointed out before. Although, therefore, the written words for "four" vary considerably in

appearance, yet it is frequently the same sound which was meant to be represented, only that it is a vague sound, and a sound for which the European alphabets have no distinct sign. Chinese and Taï have a decided s, followed by i, with the exception of the Kassia, which has sau instead of si.

Zh occurs five times, or eight times if we include the soft initial *d*, the Sanskrit *d* (ड). The *hl*, which is the Sanskrit *dh* (ढ), and which is also written *lh* or *l*, occurs eleven times, including the cases where it is joined by common prefixes. But there is one prefix which occurs so frequently that it seems to be more than a prefix. It may have been by itself a word for "four," which, as is usual in monosyllabic languages, was joined to the other word for "four," in order to make the intended meaning more apparent.* This word is pi, and it occurs by itself as the word for four in Newar, pi, Changlo, phi, Miri, a-pi-ko, and Abor, a-pi. Together with lhi or rhi, we find it in Takpa, p|li, Garung, p|li, Magar, bu|li, Murmi, b|li, Lepcha, pha|li, Chepang, p|loi|zho, Mikir, phili, Dophla, a|p|li, Nága, pha|le, pha|li, pi|li, Kumi, palu, Shendû, pu|lli, and in Bodo, b|re, Garo, b|ri, Nága, pa|zr, and Sak, p|ri. What raises a doubt, however, as to the origin and meaning of the initial labial sound in these words, is that the same labial prefix occurs sometimes before "five" in the same dialects which add it to "four," though they do not use it before any other numerals. In two cases "five" is expressed by the single labial, ba, me-pa. In Tibetan, as pointed out by Mr. Hodgson (1853, p. 59), zhi (four) is written bzhi.

"Five" in Taï is HA, except the Kassia san. In the other Bhotîya dialects the original base of "five" was GNA. This may be contained in the Chinese ung, for GNA can also be represented by NGA. In the Bhotîya class GNA is so little disguised, that no explanation is required. We might naturally expect na and ga, instead of nga; but we also find more violent changes, such as gwa and wa; and still more anomalous, ma in pu-ma. Among the prefixes the constant labial has been already mentioned. This is sometimes followed by l, so as to render the origin of forms such as pi-li-ngo-ko rather problematical.

* An analogous feature of the Malay languages is pointed out in Mr. Crawfurd's Malay Grammar, page 81.

Six" in the Taï languages is RUK, HUK, and in Chinese LU and LOK. Now it will easily be seen that the various forms of one and the same numeral in the Taï languages are nothing but phonetic varieties of the same word. Nor is it difficult to account for the transition of r into l, or for the omission or addition of a final k. (See page 396.) With all these allowances, however, we do not obtain a base which will explain all the corruptions of the Bhotiya words for "six." A base which would account for most, would be RHU, only that we should have to admit two prefixes, t and k. The simple RHU would account for forms like ru and ro, and also for dhu and thu, if these two are meant as lingual aspirates. The prefix t would then explain forms like ta ru, tau, tarok, thorok, and soru; and the prefix k would account for the rest, such as kro, krukzho, khyauk (ray in Burmese). Still even thus a residuum remains, which it is better not to attempt to analyse until we receive more accurate lists than those which we have at present, where, as for instance in Garo, "six" is given in one list as krok, in another as dok.

For the same reason I abstain at present from tracing the remaining numerals from seven to ten back to their original types Their general likeness leaves no doubt that they also proceeded from one common source. We find, in spite of occasional deviations, a sufficient number of almost identical words for seven, eight, nine, and ten in the most distant members of the Bhotîya family to be satisfied as to their common origin. We must make allowance, however, for this, that some languages express seven by 6+1, as for instance thorchi, which stands for thorok+chi. Again, eight is expressed by a compound 10—2, and nine by 10—1; for instance, in Mikir, where 10 is kip, 9 chirkep, 8 nirkep. Yet, with all these exceptions, anomalies, and corruptions, this one important fact remains established, that the Bhotîya and Taï members of the Turanian family show in their numerals their former unity and continuity as distinctly as the languages of Arian origin.

Seventh Section.

The Malay Languages.

In the first part of this Letter I endeavoured to show that, where the means are wanting to enable us to trace the genealogical connection of large groups of languages, it is yet possible to classify them on grounds merely morphological. In a nomadic state of language words are liable to such rapid changes, and those arising not from phonetical corruption, but from actual loss and a continued reproduction of words, that, after some generations, one language may be split into two dialects, in which the most common objects are expressed by different terms. Nomadic languages shed their words almost in every century; while political languages keep their plumage for thousands of years. It would be hopeless, therefore, to attempt to test the relationship of nomadic dialects by the same agencies that bring out the affinities of political languages; nor would it be right to deny their proper weight to coincidences in the leading principles of grammatical formation, which, like a natural instinct, may live on where all external signs of relationship are obliterated. "A language," as Humboldt says, "cannot be looked upon as a mere aggregate of words. Every language is a system by which the mind embodies an idea in audible expression. It is the business of the philologist to discover the key to this system. It will then appear that races not only express their ideas in the same manner, but follow the same path in their forms of speech."

§ 1. *Formal Coincidences between the Malay and Taï Languages.*

It is from this point of view that the Taï and Malay languages may be ranged together, as coinciding most strikingly in some of the most characteristic features of their grammar. It is not the geographical proximity of the Malays and Siamese races which suggests this idea. The settlement of the Malays on the continent of Malacca is generally considered as of modern date. Nor is it a mere community of words which led to this supposition. Here again, unless our comparison

extended over the whole dictionary of these two races, it would be impossible to say whether the Siamese had borrowed from the Malays, or the Malays from the Siamese. Nor do I wish to prove that Siamese and Malay are lineal descendants of the same parent. But there exists in their grammar an instinct so peculiar and constant, that it is in vain to try to account for it without the admission, that before the dispersion of the descendants of Tur, the nomads of the Pacific received their first grammatical impressions together with the rest of the Turanian family ; that after their first separation they continued for a long time together with that branch of the southern Turanian division which occupies the valley of the Brahmaputra and extends to the peninsula of Malacca; while all that seems to be Arian in their grammar and dictionary, and has been used by Bopp to prove the original connection of the Malay and Arian languages, was simply imported during a later political and religious intercourse between the Arian colonists of India and the Turanian inhabitants of the Indian Archipelago.

The following are some of the leading features which the Malay share in common with the Taï languages. For the Malay I refer to Mr. Crawfurd's Grammar; for the Taï, to the Grammatical Outlines of Mr. Robinson, chiefly taken from the Khamti. "This," to quote Mr. Robinson's words, "in common with the Siamese, Laos, Shyan, and Ahom, is only a dialect of the language usually known as the Taï; a language more or less prevalent through all that wide tract of country extending from Siam to the valley of the Brahmaputra. In a language so extensive in its use, it might be conjectured that local peculiarities would have given rise to a great diversity of dialects, so that the Khamti and Siamese, spoken at the extremities, would have presented but few links of connection. On the contrary, however, we find that the discrepancies between the two are very trifling." This shows that the Taï must once have passed through a period of literary cultivation and grammatical concentration, and that the Taï dialects spoken at the present day are but varieties of one common type.

Mr. Brown's investigations led him to the conclusion, that upwards of nine tenths of the fundamental words are the same in Siamese and Khamti, with the exception of a few slight variations of pronunciation. These variations are mostly confined to a few letters: viz.

ch, which the northern tribes change to ts; d, for which they use l or n; r, which becomes h; and ua, which is changed for long o.

"Different systems of writing," as Mr. Robinson remarks, "have been introduced to express the sounds of the different dialects of the Taï. The Khamti and Shyan alphabets are derived from the Burmese; the Laos is nearly related to Burmese, but more complete and better adapted to the wants of the language than the Shyan; whilst the Siamese character bears only a remote resemblance to Burmese."

1. In Khamti, inflections are unknown, and the accidents of case, mood, and tense are expressed by means of particles.

In Malay, there are no inflections to express gender, number, person, time, or mood.

2. Words or particles which serve as the exponents of these grammatical relations, and which in the Ural-Altaic languages are always placed after the root, may, both in Malay and Taï, be used as prepositions as well as postpositions.

3. The relation of the genitive may be expressed by mere juxtaposition. But while in Chinese the first word is understood to be in the genitive, the governed word, or what we call the genitive, stands last both in Malay and Taï.

Examples: Taï: Hang, a tail; pa, a fish.
hang pa, a fish's tail.

Malay: Tuwan, master; âmba, slave.
Tuwan âmba, the master of the slave;
âmba tuwan, the slave of the master.

4. The accusative takes no preposition in Khamti and Malay; in the latter, pâda (to) may be added.

The accusative follows the verb in Siamese and Malay.

5. The other cases, if cases they can be called, are formed in Taï and Malay by prepositions.

a. Dative in Taï: Hang.

Ex. Hang[2] man[3] hau[1] da, Give[1] to[2] him[3].

a. Dative in Malay: ka, kapâda.

Ex. Maka kata raja kapâda estrina, The king said to his spouse (strî).

b. Ablative in Taï: luk, from.
in Malay: dâri, ka-luwar, from.

c. Locative in Taï: ti, in.
in Malay: di, in.

Ex. Di nâgri Tringanu, The country of Tringganu.

6. The Khamti noun admits of no plural. The singular, where necessary, may be expressed by the addition of the numeral one in Siamese and Malay. Plurality in Malay is expressed by an adjective having this sense: as, bañak, many; sâgala and sakalian, all; and the numerals. In Khamti, in those instances where the noun does not express a collective or plural idea, a numeral added to it renders the expression sufficiently intelligible.

7. Gender is not expressed; but to indicate the difference of sex in the inferior animals, the term thuk is used to denote the male, and me the female in Khamti.

Ex. A horse: Masc. ma thuk; Fem. ma me.
A cat: Masc. miau thuk; Fem. miau me.

In Malay, a male of the lower animals is expressed by the adjective jantan; a female, by bâtina.

Ex. A horse: Masc. kuda jantan; Fem. kuda bâtina.
A cat: Masc. kuching jantan; Fem. kuching bâtina.

For individuals of the human family different words are used in Taï and Malay: sau and ying, in the former; laki and pârâmpüan or estrî (Sanskrit), in the latter.

Ex. Taï: Luk sau, son; luk ying, daughter.
Malay: Anak laki, son; anak pârâmpüan, daughter.
Taï: Pi sau, brother; pi ying, sister.
Malay: Saudara laki, brother; saudara pârâmpüan, sister.

Exceptions where distinct words are used, are,
Malay: Pa, father; ma, mother.
Taï: Po, father; me, mother.

8. In Taï, the adjective follows the substantive.

Ex. Kun ni, a good man.
Ma ma-ni, a bad (not-good) dog.

In Malay, an adjective, by its form, is not distinguishable from the noun; for the same word is often either, according to position. It is its place, following the noun, which marks the word as expressing quality.

Ex. Putish kayin, the whiteness of cloth.
Kayin putish, white cloth.

9. In forming the comparative degree of the adjective in Khamti, the word leu, beyond, is added to it in its positive form.

In Malay, the comparative is expressed by dâripâda; dâri meaning from, pâda, with.

Ex. Khamti: Yaü[1] leu[2] hün[3], great[1] beyond[2] the house[3]; or, Noi[1] sung[2] leu[3] peun[4], a mountain[1] high[2] beyond[3] all[4]; i. e. the highest mountain.

Malay: Bâyik[1] dâripâda[2] samuwaña[3], good[1] from[2] with all[3]; or, Lâbih bâyik dâripâda samuvaña, very good from with all, i. e. best.

10. In the numerals, no coincidences can be pointed out between Malay and Taï; and the great similarity of the Taï numerals with Chinese, makes it not improbable they were actually adopted from Chinese. But the Malay numerals participate in a feature peculiarly Turanian, that of forming the words for eight and nine, by 10—2 and 10—1. Dulapan, eight, contains du, 2; sâmbilan, nine, contains sa, 1; as determinative elements. If salâpan is used for eight, this can only be explained as a mistake; and in the Sunda dialect of Java, salâpan has retained its original meaning of nine, dâlâpan, of eight. Different etymologies have been given of lâpan, and bilan, which may be seen in Humboldt, Bopp, and Buchanan; but they do not affect our argument as to the Turanian character of these formations.

11. Another feature deserves to be pointed out with regard to the numerals, connecting the Taï languages most closely with the Malay. Mr. Crawfurd describes it in the following manner:

In the enumeration of certain objects, the Malay has a peculiar idiom, which, as far as I know, does not exist in any other language of the Archipelago. It is of the same nature as the word "head," as we use it in the tale of cattle; or "sail," in the enumeration of ships; but in Malay, it extends to many familiar objects.

Âlai, of which the original meaning has not been ascertained, is applied to such tenuous objects, as leaves, grasses, hairs, and feathers.

Bâtang, meaning stem or trunk, to trees, logs, spars, spears, and javelins.

Bântak, of which the meaning has not been ascertained, to such objects as rings.

Bidang, which means spreading or spacious, to mats, carpets, thatch, sails, skins, and hides.

Biji, seed, to corn, seeds, stones, pebbles, gems, eggs, the eyes of animals, lamps, and candlesticks.

Bilah, which means a pale or stake, to cutting instruments, as knives, daggers, and swords.

Butir, a grain, to pepper, beads, cushions, pillows, and, strangely enough, to brooks and rivers.

Buwah, fruit, to fruit, loaves, cakes, mountains, countries, lakes, boats and ships, houses, palaces and temples.

Ekor, tail, to beasts, birds, fishes, and reptiles.

Kayu, which means wood, to any object rolled up, as a piece of cloth.

Keping, a sheet, to any foliacious object, as a sheet of paper.

Orang, man or person, to human beings

Puchuk, which means literally top, to cannon and small-arms, to candles and torches, and to letters or missives.

Rawan, which is literally gristle or cartilage, to all descriptions of cordage.

Ex. Ada säorâng saudagar kapâda sabuwah nâgri, There was one-man merchant, in one fruit (of a) country.

Bad'il limapuluh puchuk, dan pad'ang lima ratus bilah, Fire-arms, fifty pieces, and sword five-hundred stake.

Let us now compare the Khamti. Here, according to Mr. Robinson, numeral affixes, or as they have sometimes been called, generic particles, are in common use. These particles are affixed to numeral adjectives, and serve to point out the genus to which the preceding substantive belongs.

To is the numeral affix applied to animals. When the number to be expressed is one, the generic particle precedes the numeral ; in every other case it follows : —

Ex. Pe^{2} nan^{1} luk^{5} on^{3} yang^{4} song-to. That^{1} goat^{2} has^{3} two^{4} kids^{5}.

Bai is the numeral affix applied to such nouns as leaf, paper, umbrella.

Nue is applied to things round.

Thep, and phen, to flat substances.

Phün, to pieces of cloth.

Sen, to things having length.

Ho, to bundles, packets, and the like.

Sem, to sticks, posts, spears.

Khot, to ropes, and such articles as can be coiled up.

Ban, to villages, hamlets, and towns.

The use of these numeral affixes is evidently based on a peculiarity of conception, remarkable as any in the grammar of nations. The nations who employ these generic exponents, were incapable of conceiving quantity in the abstract; a defect in their logical powers more suggestive to the ethnologist than any peculiarity in the anatomical structure of their skull. We find the same generic particles in Burmese, where, as in Malay and Taï, they are placed after the numerals; while, in Kachari and Mikir, they are placed before. In its most developed state, we find the same custom in Chinese. There also the numerical exponent stands after the numeral and before the substantive, except in accounts, when, as in Burmese, the noun is put first, then the numeral, and last the generic term. These generic terms were collected by P. Basilius in his Dictionnaire (p. 933), and by Morrison in his Chinese Grammar (pp. 37—59), and alphabetically arranged by Endlicher, in his Chinese Grammar. Humboldt discusses them in his work on the Kavi language (p. 428). Besides the Chinese, the Taï, Burmese, and Malay languages, the Mexican also employs similar generic exponents.

12. The pronouns in Khamti are the only words which have a separate form for the plural:

Kau, I,	becomes	Hau, we.
Maü, thou,	,,	Maü su, you.
Man, he,	,,	Man khau, they.

In Malay, the pronouns afford the only instance of a distinction of number which exists in the language:

Ku, I,	becomes	Ki-ta, we.
Mu, thou,	„	Ka-mi, you.
Ña, he,	„	Marika, they.

The coincidence of the radical portion of the pronouns, particularly in the first and second persons, requires no comment.

13. Malay and Siamese are both distinguished by an extraordinary number of pronouns of the first and second persons, which are used according to the rank which the speaker or the person addressed is supposed to hold. They are in reality not pronouns, but substantives, meaning servant, lord, etc.

14. The relative pronoun in Khamti is Yang; in Malay, Yang.

15. The Malay has possessive pronominal suffixes, which are really the personal pronouns in their shortest forms, appended to nouns.

For instance: ârta-ku, my property.
ârta-mu, thy property.
ârta-ña, her property.

The same phrases can be formed in Khamti, where
mü, is hand, man, he; and
mü man, his hand.

16. Demonstrative pronouns:

Malay: Ini, this.	Khamti: Annai, this.
Itu or nun, that.	Annan, that.

17. Interrogative pronouns:

Malay: Apa, who?	Khamti: Phaü, who?

18. The verb in Malay and Taï is so simple that we can hardly expect many coincidences between these two languages, which might not be pointed out in other dialects standing on the same low level of grammatical development. A few, however, may here be mentioned. There are no terminations in either, to express the persons of the verb; the root remains the same whatever pronoun may precede it; and even the particles used to indicate the past or future, the transitive or intransitive, the potential or subjunctive mood,

are frequently omitted, particularly in conversation. "In Malay," as Mr. Crawfurd says, "we can fancy a period in the history of the language, in which these particles may not have been used at all, the single radicals being found sufficient for all the ideas of a rude people and an uncouth tongue." During this state of language the absence of all formal distinction between nouns and verbs, would naturally bring out that other feature of Turanian grammar to which we have frequently alluded before, and which Mr. Crawfurd describes in the following terms:—"With the exception of some pronouns, nouns representing material objects, the prepositions which stand for the cases of languages of complex structure, and a few conjunctions and adverbs, any part of speech may, by the application of inseparable particles, be converted into a verb. Thus the nouns a t i, the heart, t u w a n, master, p r a n g, war; the adjectives, b a y i k, good, b â t u l, straight, p u t i h, white; the pronouns, a k u, I, and d i·r i, self; the prepositions a d·a p, before, b â l a k a n g, behind, â m p i r, near; and the adverbs l â k a s and s i g r a, quickly; are all convertible into verbs by the application of certain inseparable particles."

19. Three tenses can be traced in Khamti; the present, the past, and the future. In the present we have the verb in its complete state; in the past, a particle is added, denoting completion or fulfilment; and another particle, expressing will or determination, makes the future:

Ex. Kau kin, I eat.
Kau kin yau, I have eaten.
Kau ta kin, I shall eat.

In Malay, time is often left to be inferred; but when it becomes necessary to state present time, such adverbs as s â k a r a n g, now, or the verb a d a *, to be, are employed. A preterite or past time is expressed by the adddition of t â l a h, past, s u d a h, enough, a b i s, ended, l a l u, gone. Future time is expressed by the verbs m a u, to will, and a n d a k, to desire; and by the preposition a k â n, to, for instance,

Aku kan, I eat.
Aku kan lalu, I have eaten.
Aku akân kan, I shall eat.

* In Siamese, the verb to be, a y û, is used to form the present.

20. A potential mood is commonly expressed in Khamti by p a, can:

Ex. Kau kin pa, I can eat, I could eat.

In Malay, a potential mood is expressed by the verbs b u l i h and d a p a t, used as auxiliaries; and which, literally translated, mean to can or be able, and to get or find; but which have the English sense of can or may:

Ex. Aku kan dapat, I can eat.

21. Nouns are derived from verbs in Malay, by applying to a radical the affix a n, or the prefix p â, or both together:

Ex. D a g a n g, to trade; p â-d a g a n g, a trader.
s u r u h, to order; s u r u h-a n, a messenger.
a s â p, to smoke; p â r-a s â p-a n, a censer.

In Khamti the participial form is denoted by the particle a n, put before the verb:

Ex. An-kin, eating.

A language which shares so many grammatical principles in common with Khamti and Siamese, and differs from Sanskrit on every essential point of grammar, can no longer be counted as a degraded member of the Arian family, however great the authority of him who first endeavoured to link Sanskrit and Malay together. Without entering into the question of the spreading of the Malay dialects, and the connection of the Malay and the other Polynesian idioms, we may safely assert that the grammatical fibres of the Taï and the Malay languages hold closely together; and that the Malays, whatever their later wanderings may have been, must, in their first state, be traced to the Continent of Asia, and to the same home from which the inhabitants of the whole Eastern peninsula proceeded southward in times unreached by history or by tradition. If the Malay is thus secured to the Turanian family, the whole question of its connection with the Polynesian languages will have to be viewed in a new light, and the conflicting opinions of Humboldt and Crawfurd may receive a solution consistent both with that fundamental unity which struck the comprehensive genius of the former, and the startling discrepancy of local varieties that attracted the notice of so patient a collector and so careful an investigator as Mr. Crawfurd.

§ 2. *Humboldt's and Crawfurd's Views on the Languages of Polynesia and the Indian Archipelago.*

The following extracts from Humboldt's and Crawfurd's works will show the present state of this disputed question. I have availed myself of an excellent article "On the conflicting Views of European Scholars, as to the Races inhabiting Polynesia and the Indian Archipelago," by the Honourable Sir Erskine Perry, in which the evidence on both sides is summed up with fairness and lucidity. Sir Erskine gives the passages from Humboldt in so masterly a translation, that we hope he may soon publish a more complete translation, which, he tells us, he has prepared for educational purposes. Humboldt's view on the Malay language, as given in his posthumous work, "On the Varieties of Human Language and its Influence on the Mental Development of Mankind," may be stated in his own words, as follows:

"The races of Malay origin, with respect to locality, government, history, and, above all, language, are perhaps more singularly connected with races of different cultivation than any other people in the world. They inhabit only islands and island groups, but these extend over so wide a range as to afford unmistakeable testimony to their early acquaintance with navigation. Their settlement on the Continent at Malacca scarcely deserves to be mentioned here, as it is of modern date, and proceeded from Sumatra, and that on the coasts of the China Sea, and of the Gulf of Siam, at Champa, was a still later occurrence. With these exceptions, we are unable to trace, with any certainty, even in the most remote history, the existence of Malays on the mainland. If from these races we separate those who in a strict sense deserve the name of Malays, and who, according to undeniable grammatical researches, speak closely allied tongues, easily intelligible to one another, we shall find them settled (only mentioning those points where the inquiry into languages has had sufficient materials to work on) in the Philippines,— where the language is to be found in the richest development of forms, and in its most original condition, — in Java, Sumatra, Malacca, and Madagascar. A large number of words, however, of unquestionable relationship, and even

the names of a considerable number of islands, betoken that the islands in the neighbourhood of the above localities are peopled by a similar race, and that even the more strictly so-called Malay language extends itself over all that portion of the South Pacific which reaches from the Philippines southerly to the West Coast of New Guinea, and, more westerly, to the chain of islands which joins the eastern point of Java, and runs up between Java and Sumatra to the Straits of Malacca. It is a matter for regret that the large islands of Borneo and Celebes, to which probably all that has been said above may apply, have not yet had their languages sufficiently examined to allow of any conclusion being drawn on grammatical grounds.

" To the eastward of the zone here drawn of the pure Malay language, from New Zealand to Easter Island, thence northerly to the Sandwich Islands, and then back again westwards to the Philippines, a race of islanders is to be found, who display most unquestionable traces of an old connection in blood with the Malays. This is proved by the number of similar words, and essential coincidences of physical structure, in the languages whose grammar we know intimately, such as those of New Zealand, Tahiti, the Sandwich Islands, and Tongu. A like similarity is to be found in manners and customs, especially where pure Malay customs are recognisable, unadulterated by Indian usages. Whether the races to the north-west in this part of the Pacific belong wholly or in part to the latter division, or to the Malays in the strict sense; or whether they form a connecting link between the two, cannot yet be decided with our present materials, as even the researches which have been set on foot with respect to the language of the Mariana Group have not yet been made public. The whole of these races possess social institutions sufficiently complicated to make it improper to exclude them wholly from the class of civilized nations. They have a well-established, and by no means simple system of government, of religious doctrines, and of usages, and some of them possess a species of spiritual government; they display skill in various arts, and are bold and experienced seamen. We find amongst them in several spots the remains of a sacred language, unintelligible even to themselves; and their custom of recalling formally obsolete expressions into life on certain occasions, speaks not only to

the richness, age, and depth of the language, but also to their powers of observation as to the effect of time in modifying circumstances. With all this they allowed, and still partly allow, barbarous practices inconsistent with civilisation.* They appear never to have acquired the art of writing, and, consequently, are deprived of all that literature which is founded upon it, although they are by no means wanting in fanciful legends, impressive eloquence, and poetry in defined rhythmical cadence. Their languages, however, have not sprung out of any corruption or change of the Malay tongue of the narrower zone, but we may rather trace in them an uniform and original condition of the latter.

"Along with the race thus described in the two divisions of the Great Southern Archipelago, we meet, on some of the islands, with people who, from their appearance, must be attributed to a wholly different stock. Both the Malays in the stricter sense, and the more eastern inhabitants of the South Sea, belong without doubt to the same human family, and they form, if one makes an accurate division by colours, the class passing from the light brown into white. The races of whom we are now speaking approximate, by their black skin, occasionally by their woolly frizzled hair, and by their peculiar features and build, to the African Negro, although, according to the most trustworthy evidence, they are nevertheless essentially different, and can by no means be considered as the same race. Writers on these countries, in order to distinguish them from Negroes, call them either Negritoes or Austral-Negroes, and but few of them exist. Both in the islands inhabited by the Malay races, and in the Philippines, they usually occupy the middle of the island, and inaccessible hills, to which they appear to have been gradually driven by the more numerous and powerful white race. We must carefully, however, distinguish them from the Haraforas, or Alfuris, the Turajos of Celebes, who are to be found in Borneo, Celebes, the Moluccas, Mindenao, and some other islands. These latter appear to have been driven out in a similar manner by their neighbours, but belong to the light brown race; and Marsden attributes their disappearance

* Mr. Crawfurd mentions a somewhat cultivated race in Sumatra, well acquainted with letters, who appear to be the only literary cannibals recorded in history. — E. P.

from the coast to Mahomedan persecution. In wildness they approximate to the black race, and they constitute a population of uniformly low development. Other islands, amongst which are some large ones, like New Guinea, New Britain, New Zealand, and some of the Hebrides, contain these Negro races only, and the inhabitants of the large continents of New Holland and Van Dieman's Land, so far as there has been hitherto opportunity of becoming acquainted with them, belong to the same race. But although this race in all the localities here indicated displays general marks of similarity and relationship, it is by no means thoroughly established how far essential differences of race exist among them, for their language has not yet been investigated so as to satisfy the exigencies of a thorough grammatical inquiry. We have only the materials collected by the Missionary Trelkeld as to one race in New South Wales, by which we are enabled to form any judgment as to its organic and grammatical structure. The race everywhere distinguishes itself by a greater wildness and barbarism than appears in the lighter races; and the differences herein relate solely to their greater or less intercourse with the latter. The inhabitants of New Holland and Van Dieman's Land appear to stand on the lowest grade of civilization which has ever yet been occupied by mankind. It is a remarkable phenomenon to meet, even on the peninsula of Malacca, the light and dark races in contact with one another; for the Semangs, who occupy part of the mountain range of that country, are by most unquestionable testimony, a woolly-haired Negrito race. As this is the only point of the mainland of Asia where the fact occurs, it is unquestionable that immigration must have taken place here at a comparatively recent period. Among the lighter races, also, as the Malay expression *orang benna* (men of the country) appears to prove, more than one immigration seems to have occurred. Both occurrences only show, therefore, that the same kind of connection between countries at different periods brings about similar historical facts, and, consequently, to this extent there is nothing remarkable in them. In reference to the state of culture of the different races of mankind in this Archipelago, however, any explanation by means of colonization becomes deceptive. To enterprising nations, the sea offers rather a means of easy connection than of distinct separation,

and the general diffusion of bold active seamen, like the Malays, explains itself in this way, by short trips from island to island, sometimes intentionally made, and sometimes by their being driven away through the violence of the prevailing winds; for activity, expertness, and knowledge of sea-craft, are not characteristics of the proper Malay only, but are to be found amongst the whole of the light brown race. I need only mention here the Bugis of Celebes, and the South Sea Islanders. But if this description of the Negritoes, and of their diffusion from New Holland to the Philippines, and from New Guinea to the Andamanns, is correct, these races must have deteriorated more than is usually supposed from a more civilized condition, and have become wild. Their present condition rather favours the hypothesis, which is not in itself improbable, of revolutions of nature, old traditions of which still exist in Java, by which a populous continent became broken up into the present island groups. Men, like ruins, might, so far as mankind could survive such convulsions, have remained on the scattered island tops. Both of these explanations, perhaps, if united, so as to consider the dislocation by the powers of nature as occurring during a lapse of centuries, and distinguished from the connection through human colonization, might perhaps afford us some sort of account of the various races which now appear.

"Tanna, one of the Hebrides, but a word of Malay origin, New Caledonia, Timor, Ende, and some other islands, possess a population which is left doubtful after inquiry whether we are to reckon it, with Crawfurd, as a third race, or, with Marsden, as a mixture of the two others; for the inhabitants, in their physical make, woolliness of hair, and colour of skin, occupy a middle place between the light brown and black races. If, at the same time, a similar affirmation can be made as to their language, this circumstance would tell authoritatively for their being a mixed race. There still remains an important question, but one very difficult to decide from the materials at hand, viz., how far older and more intimate mixtures of the white and black races have occurred in these countries, and how far gradual changes may thereupon have ensued in language, and even in colour and growth of hair, the woolliness of which, moreover, in some localities, is cultivated as an ornament. To judge correctly of the

Negro races in their pure form, we must always commence with the inhabitants of the Great Southern Continent, as between these and the brown races no direct contact is conceivable, and according to their present condition it is difficult to suppose any kind even of indirect connection. The remarkable fact still remains, that many words in the languages of these races, although we certainly possess only a few of them, bear an evident likeness to the words of the South Sea Islands.

" Amid these geographical relations, in some instances amounting to close neighbourhood, certain Malay races adopted Indian civilization to such an extent that perhaps no similar example is to be found of a nation undergoing such a complete infusion of the national spirit of another race, without losing its own independence. The phenomenon as a whole is very intelligible. A large part of the Archipelago, and the most attractive from its climate and fertility, lay at a very short distance from the great continent of India — opportunities and points of contact were consequently abundant. But where such occurred, the preponderating influence of a civilization so ancient, and so diffused through every branch of human activity as the Hindu, could not fail to attract towards it other nations of active and impressionable temperaments. This was rather a moral than a political revolution. We recognise it in its consequences in the Hindu elements, which undeniably present themselves to view in a certain range of Malay races; but how did this mixture arise? On this point, even amongst the Malays, as we shall see, nothing but obscure and doubtful traditions exist. If inroads of powerful races and extensive conquests had produced this state of things, clearer traces of such political events would have been preserved. Intellectual and moral causes work, like nature herself, in silence, and their operation is similar to the growth of a seed, eluding observation. The *modus operandi* in which Hinduism struck root amongst the Malay races, proves that as a mental spring of action it excited the imagination, and became powerful through the impressions of wonder which it produced in races susceptible of culture. In India itself, so far as I know, we find no mention of the South-eastern Archipelago in Hindu history or literature. Even if Lanka were perhaps considered to extend further than the limits of Ceylon, this was only dark and

uncertain surmising, or mere poetical license. From the Archipelago itself, on the other hand, as we may well conceive, nothing proceeded which could have any influence on the mainland. It was India that exerted a substantial influence, and perhaps even by colonization, which was not intended to keep the mother country in view as a home, or to preserve relations with it. Reasons for establishing settlements might be various. How far Buddhist persecution might have co-operated, I shall have to discuss hereafter.

"But to explain properly the mixture of Malay and Hindu elements, and the influence of India on the whole of the Indian Archipelago, we must discriminate between its different modes of operation, and thereby commence with that which, early as it may have began, has continued to the latest times, and consequently has left the clearest and most indelible traces. It is not only the influence of a spoken foreign language which in this case, as in all mixtures of nations, operates powerfully, but also the whole of the mental culture which springs out of it. This phenomenon is unquestionably apparent in the introduction of Indian language, literature, myths, and religious philosophy into Java. The whole purport of the following work is to discuss this question, but principally with reference to language, — I therefore must content myself here with this mere allusion. This species of influence affected only the Indian Archipelago, properly so called, and the Malay zone in its stricter sense; but possibly not even the whole of the latter, and certainly not to an equal extent. The focus was so undoubtedly Java, that we may reasonably doubt whether that island was not the immediate source from which it extended itself over the rest of the Archipelago. Independent of Java, we find, however, distinct and complete proofs of Indian civilisation amongst the proper Malays and Bugis of Celebes. A true literature, from the essential elements of the formation of language, is only capable of existing contemporaneously with a written character which is in daily use. It is an important fact, therefore, for the mental development of the South-eastern Archipelago, that just that portion of the island group which has been designated as strictly Malay possesses an alphabetic character. A distinction not to be overlooked, however, here occurs. The alphabetic character in this part of the world is Indian. This arose

naturally from the intellectual relations of these countries, and is visible in most of their alphabets, with the exception, perhaps, of the Bugis, in the similarity of the letters, not to mention their arrangement to designate sounds, which undoubtedly does not furnish any decisive proof, as it might have been adopted subsequently to a foreign alphabet. Nevertheless, a complete similarity, with merely an adaptation to the simpler phonetic system of the indigenous tongues, occurs only in Java, and perhaps at Sumatra. The character of the Tagalis and of the Bugis is so different, that it may be regarded as an example of alphabetic invention. In Madagascar the Arabic character has planted itself, as the Indian has done in the centre of the Archipelago. At what period this occurred is uncertain. And there does not appear to be any trace of an original character which it displaced. The use of the Arabic character amongst the Malays proper decides nothing as to their intellectual relations, which we are now discussing, for it is notoriously a modern introduction. I have already mentioned the total want of all writing in the South Sea Islands, and amongst the woolly-haired races. The traces of Hinduism which we have here in sight are so distinct that we may recognise them everywhere without difficulty, and we can distinguish them as foreign elements. No true intermixture or amalgamation is here discernible, but a mere mosaic union of foreign and native. So far as relates to manners and customs, we may clearly recognise in Indian antiquity the foreign words in the Sanskrit descended to us, and which have not entirely lost their grammatical forms: we may even discover the laws which governed the transplantation of foreign elements of speech into a native soil. This is the foundation of the cultivated and poetic language of Java, and is closely connected with the introduction of literature and religion. All that has been said above undoubtedly has not operated with the language of the people, and still less can it be affirmed, that merely because Indian words are to be found in it, they were introduced in a similar manner. In thus tracing minutely the operations of the different modes of Indian influence, two deeply-seated questions arise, suggested by actual phenomena, but which are extremely difficult to answer accurately, viz. whether the whole of the civilisation of the Archipelago is traceable to an Indian origin; and whether,

from a period anterior to the rise of literature, and to the last and most complete development of the language, any connection existed between the Malay and Sanskrit languages, which is still capable of being traced in the social elements of speech ?

"I am inclined to answer the former of these questions in the negative. It appears to me to be made out that the brown race had an original civilization of their own. It is still to be found in the Eastern portion, and is not altogether unrecognizable in Java. It may, indeed, be said, that the population of the Archipelago principally issued from its centre, where the influence of India was most powerful, and extended itself thence towards the east and west, so that the distinct Hindu element becomes more diluted at each extremity. This proposition, however, is supported, less by any distinct similarity than by remarkable coincidences in manners, which have nothing specially Indian to distinguish them, amongst the races of the central and eastern parts of the Archipelago. One sees also no reason why we should deny to a race like the Malay a self-developed civilization, in whatever subsequent direction the march of population, and their gradual culture may have been. A proof is even afforded by the readiness of the different tribes belonging to the race to adopt the Hinduism imported among them, and, still further, by the manner in which they still retain the indigenous element, and scarcely ever allow its peculiar form to merge in the Indian. The contrary would have happened if these races had been wild, uncultivated savages, when Indian colonization first came in contact with them. When I speak here of Hindus, I of course only mean people speaking the Sanskrit language, and not the inhabitants of the continent of India generally. How far the one race came in contact with, and was, perhaps, driven out by the other, I do not now enter upon, as my purpose is only to show the different elements of civilization by which the Malay races were influenced.

"The second question, which alone relates to language, must, I conceive, be answered in the affirmative. In this respect the limits of Hindu influence have a wider range. Without mentioning the Tagali, which contains a tolerable number of Sanskrit words, with completely different meanings, there are to be found, even in the languages of Madagascar and the South Sea Islands, both words and

sounds belonging to the Sanskrit, and in such an elementary part of speech as the pronoun ; and even the modes of change of sound, which may be looked upon as a good comparative test of the period of introduction, are different in the languages of the narrower Malay zone, in which, as in the Javanese, it is notorious that the influences of Hindu literature and language displayed themselves at a much later period. It becomes, therefore, a matter of great difficulty to explain this phenomenon, and to ascertain what reciprocal operation these two great families of languages have on one another. At the end of this essay I will return to the subject, as it is sufficient for me here to call attention to the influence of Sanskrit on the Malay languages, which appears to be distinct from the subsequently introduced mental cultivation and literature, and to belong to a much earlier period, and to different connections between the two races. I shall subsequently touch on the languages of the Negro race, but must make the preliminary remark now, that if in some of these tongues, as in the Papuan of New Guinea, for example, similarities with Sanskrit words are to be found, this does not at all prove any immediate connection between India and those islands, as such common words might have been introduced through the commerce of the Malays, just as we see now with Arabic terms.

" On seeking, therefore, to take a general view of the state of the civilization of the great Archipelago, we find the Malay populations to be hemmed in, as it were, between influences and characteristics which are strongly contrasted. On the same islands and island groups, which still contain races on the lowest level of civilization, or where at all events such tribes once existed, we find a very ancient state of culture, which had borne choice fruits, and which, derived from India, had become indigenous. The Malay races have appropriated this culture, in nearly all its parts, to themselves. Herein they may be perceived to be connected in race to the inhabitants of the South Sea Islands, who, compared to them, may be looked on as savages ; and it is even doubtful whether their language is altogether strange to the Negro races. The South Sea Islanders have kept themselves distinct from those rude races by institutions peculiar to themselves, and by a language which in their present form is quite their own. The population of the Great Archipelago, which, according to our present

knowledge, cannot be traced to the continent of Asia, is found in places where all foreign influence must be left out of consideration, in a most rude and savage state, or on the lowest step of civilization. This is especially true if we regard only the Negro races and the South Sea Islanders, and exclude the Malay races, strictly so called, although no very sufficient ground presents itself for ascribing to these races a much higher station in civilization before Indian influences had operated upon them. We still find, even with the Battas of Sumatra, whose myths and religion display unmistakeable traces of Hindu influence, the barbarous custom of cannibalism on certain occasions. The Great Archipelago, however, extends itself along the whole coast-line of Asia, and connects itself with both its extremities, stopped only by Africa on one side, and America on the other. Its centre lies at a considerable distance, so far as navigation is concerned, from the nearest point of the continent of Asia. At different times, therefore, it has been acted upon from the three great focuses of the earliest awakening of the human mind amongst mankind — China, India, and the seat of the Semitic races. It has felt the different influences of all of them at proportionately remote periods. To its earlier progress India alone contributed anything of importance; Arabia nothing, even if we except Madagascar; and China just as little of importance, notwithstanding its early settlements."

While, as these extracts show, the philosophical mind of Humboldt was always turned toward the problem of the unity of language, and bent on the discovery of the few remaining threads that would hold the vast tissue of the Polynesian dialects together, Mr. Crawfurd approaches the subject from the very opposite point, as a careful observer, awake to all that is peculiar in each dialect, and anxious rather to distinguish than to combine. Nothing is more useful to the progress of scientific discovery than the cooperation of men following principles so antagonistic. They mutually check and correct one another. While Humboldt thought already of linking the whole Polynesian family with the Arian through the medium of Sanskrit, Mr. Crawfurd shows that the Polynesian dialects themselves have not yet been definitely traced to one common source. But the disparity of dialects which rivets Mr. Crawfurd's eye, dis-

appears in great part under the comprehensive grasp of a scholar like Humboldt. Their methods, though different, will tend in the end to elicit the fact, that languages apparently unconnected in grammar and dictionary, can yet be reclaimed and comprehended under one common name by the discovery of a few characteristic features, which it would be impossible to consider as the result of mere accident.

Mr. Crawfurd holds, 1st, that there is no foundation for the prevalent idea that, Negroes excepted, all the descriptions of men in the limits above described belong to the same race; on the contrary, there are several races.

2nd. He also contends that many of the nations belonging to the same race, for example, the Malays and Javanese, speak distinct languages.

3rd. He holds that the black race, the Austral-Negroes, or Negritoes, are not identical, and that their languages, like their races, are also distinct.

4th. He admits that the Polynesians speak one very largely diffused language, with dialectic differences, but maintains that it is quite distinct from Malay.

As to identity of words being an indication of relationship between languages, Mr. Crawfurd denies it. "In the Malay and Polynesian languages," he says, "well sounding foreign words very readily gain admission. Instead of words expressing simple ideas being excluded, I should, on the whole, owing to the familiar and frequent use of the ideas, consider them the most amenable to adoption of any class of words whatsoever. Accordingly, such words will be found to have supplanted native terms altogether, or to be used as familiar terms along with them. Thus, to give some examples in Malay: the most familiar words for the head, the shoulder, the face, a limb, a hair, a pile, brother, house, elephant, the day, to speak, to talk, are all Sanskrit.

"In Javanese, we have from the same Sanskrit: the head, the shoulders, the throat, the hand, the face, father, brother, son, daughter woman, house, buffalo, elephant, with synonymes for the dog and hog, the sun, the moon, the sea, and a mountain.

"In the language of Bali, the name for sun in most familiar use is

Sanskrit, and a word of the same language is the only one in use for the numeral ten.

"It is on the same principle that I account for the existence of a similar class of Malayan words in the Tagala* of the Philippines, although the whole number of Malayan words does not exceed one fiftieth part of the language.

"In the Maori or New Zealand, the words forehead, sky, great, stone, point, to drink, to die, are Malay or Javanese; yet of these two tongues there are not a hundred words in the whole language.

"As to the personal pronouns, which have often been referred to as evidence of a common tongue, in as far as concerns the language under examination, they are certainly the most interchangeable of words, and cannot possibly be received as evidence. Some of them, for example, are found in the Polynesian dialects, where, in a vocabulary of five thousand words, a hundred Malayan terms do not exist.

"The numerals must surely be considered as out of the category of early invented words, for they imply a very considerable social advancement, and seem to be just the class of words most likely to be adopted by any savages of tolerable natural capacity. The Australians are not savages of such capacity, and although with the opportunity of borrowing the Malayan numerals, they have not done so, and in their own languages count only as far as 'two.'"

All these principles thus laid down by Mr. Crawfurd, are, of course, liable to considerable limitation, according to the language and people which form the subject of our researches; yet, as a general thesis, it must no doubt be admitted that mere similarity of words does not prove the common origin of languages. It follows, on the other hand, that mere dissimilarity of words does not prove the absence of

* In a Tagala Dictionary of 16,482 words, published by Father Juan de Nouda, Mr. Crawfurd discovers not more than

Malay and Javanese words	399
Sanskrit	33
Arabic	7
Persian	2
Telinga	1
	442

an original connection of languages. As these points has been discussed before, we shall proceed at once to give what Mr. Crawfurd considers as the safest test of a common origin of languages. He says, "The words which appear to me most fit to test the unity of languages are those indispensable to their structure, which constitute, as it were, their framework, and without which they cannot be spoken or written. These are the prepositions, which represent the cases of language of complex structure, and the auxiliaries, which represent times and moods. If a sentence can be constructed by words of the same origin in two or more languages, such languages may be safely considered as sister-tongues, — to be, in fact, dialects, or to have sprung from the same root. In applying this test, it is not necessary that the sentence so constructed should be grammatical, or that the parties speaking sister-tongues should be intelligible to each other. The languages of the south of Europe can be written with words common to them all, derived from the Latin without the assistance of any of the foreign words which all of them contain. The common stock, therefore, from which they are derived is Latin, and they are sister-tongues. English can be written with great ease with words entirely Anglo-Saxon, and without any French words, although French forms a sixth part of the whole body of its words, but *no sentence can be constructed consisting of French words only.*"

So far as this is meant as an acknowledgment that grammatical elements are the only safe basis for a classification of languages, nothing could be said against it. But first of all, languages do borrow even prepositions and conjunctions. In Turkish, every preposition in the true sense of the word, I mean every preposition standing before the noun which it governs, is Persian, Turkish * prepositions being always placed after the noun. Many conjunctions in Turkish are of Persian and Arabic origin.† Secondly, sentences can be constructed in English, consisting of French, i. e. Latin, words only. If I say "avarice produces misery," every word is Romanic, but it does not follow that, therefore, English is a Romanic language. In fact, the single letter *s*, used as the exponent of the third person sin-

* Cf. Redhouse, Grammaire de la langue Ottomane, § 994.

† Cf. Redhouse, Grammaire, § 999. seq.

gular, is sufficient to stamp the language in which such a sentence can be framed as non-Romanic. Nothing, therefore, but grammatical forms can settle the relationship of languages definitely, and even grammatical forms have occasionally been transferred from one language into another. But in no instance has an entire grammatical system, a complete set of terminations of declension or conjugation, been appropriated by a foreign tongue, and where these terminations coincide as a whole, we may be sure that we have to deal with cognate idioms. Next to the evidence of grammatical terminations, come pronouns, then numerals; then conjunctions and prepositions; and, lastly, words expressive of the simplest ideas and the most common objects of every day's life. There are instances where even such words as father and mother, brother and sister, have been replaced by foreign appellations, or by words newly formed in members of the same family of languages. But, on the whole, owing to the familiar and frequent use of these words, people are unwilling to part with them and afraid to replace them by foreign terms not intelligible at first to the whole community. The Saxons learned to use many foreign words, yet their household words remained on the whole Saxon. So did their numerals without exception, so did their pronouns, and so did in the highest degree their grammatical terminations.

But although we cannot agree with the somewhat too general principles by which Mr. Crawfurd tests the relationship of languages, we shall give the results to which his method has led him with regard to the Polynesian languages.

"Applying this test to the Malayan languages, it will be found," Mr. Crawfurd maintains, "that a sentence of Malay can be constructed without the assistance of Javanese words, or of Javanese without the assistance of Malay words. Of course, either of these two languages can be written or spoken without the least difficulty, without a word of Sanskrit or Arabic. The Malay and Javanese, then, although a large proportion of their words be in common, are distinct languages, and as to their Sanskrit and Arabic element, they are extrinsic and unessential. When the test is applied to the Polynesian languages, we find an opposite result. A sentence in the Maori and Tahitian can be written in words common to both, and without the help of one word of the Malayan which they contain, just as a sen-

tence of Welsh or Irish can be constructed without the help of Latin, although of this language they contain at least as large a proportion of words as Maori or Tahitian do of Malayan. The Maori and Tahitian are therefore essentially the same language, and their Malayan ingredient is extrinsic."

The Malayan races, according to Mr. Crawfurd, have diffused themselves, and the civilization which they attained by self-derived culture, from two distinct and independent centres. "The Malay-speaking Malays from the rich table-lands of the interior of Sumatra, — Sumatra, which, from its physical gifts, and large proportion of coast line abutting on placid seas, would be at once seized on by the geographer as a focus of civilization. And the Javanese-speaking Malays from Java, an island not less richly endowed in physical advantages."

Into the question of the common origin of the language of the Malay, the inhabitants of the more eastern islands of the South Sea, the Negritoes, and Haraforas, we cannot enter at present, though we believe that Humboldt's work has laid open so many traces of relationship, that even after his theory with regard to a distant connection of the Malay with Sanskrit and the other Arian languages is dropped, much remains to encourage the comparative philologist to work that mine of philological research which the genius of Humboldt has opened, but not yet exhausted.

The formal coincidences between the Malay and Taï grammar here pointed out for the first time, furnish a link between Asia and Polynesia, which, even by itself, is strong enough to hold two of the mightiest chains of languages together; the Nomads of the sea, extending from the east coast of Africa to the west coast of America; the Nomads of the Continent swarming from the south-east to the north-west of Asia. But further researches will strengthen this link, and add new traces of their common origin, though we have hardly a right to expect many, considering that we have to deal with languages, in which grammatical elements, are, as it were, at the mercy of every speaker, in which roots are of the vaguest character, and can, by means of accents and determinate syllables, be made to express every conceivable shade of meaning — languages which had received no individual impress before their first separation, and have grown up

since under the guidance of but few logical or grammatical principles, so as to make us sometimes doubt whether we should call them works of art or products of nature, or mere conglomerates of an irrational chance. While in political languages, comparative philology has to establish a principle by which to account for coincidences such as *Asmi*, I am, of the Veda, and *Esmi*, I am, used by the Lithuanian peasant of the present day, a principle must be found in nomadic dialects to account for differences such as we find between Mandshu and Finnish, Chinese and Tibetan, the Taï and Malay languages. These differences must be explained by analogies to be derived from American, Indo-Chinese, or Siberian idioms, where we still meet with tribes who, after a short separation, have become unintelligible to one another, and where but few traces remain in their idioms to enable the philologist to discover the common basis whence all proceeded. Unless such principles can be established, all attempts to prove the common origin of nomadic languages will fail. To transfer the rules of Arian or Semitic philology to this vast field of linguistic research, would betray an utter ignorance of the nature of language; it would be, as it has been well expressed, like cutting stones with razors. To consider the few remaining coincidences between such idioms as the result of accident, would be a view incompatible with the philosophy of language, which allows indeed casual parallelisms between dialects no longer connected by any ties of relationship, but distinguishes carefully between these, the result of mere accident, and other congruences, which, though few in number and small in extent, could not, like the segments of a circle, coincide without the admission of a common centre whence all proceeded, and from which their various distances must be measured.

Eighth Section.

Tamulic Class.

§ 1. *Early Traces of the Tamulic Nishâdas.*

We now return through the valley of Asam to where the Brahmaputra joins his sister, the Gangâ. It is here, on the coast of Bengal that we meet with the first historical traces of the Tamulic languages.

Where the Gomati falls into the Brahmaputra, stood formerly the kingdom of Tripura. As Garuda, the bird of Vishnu, is praised as the devourer of the Kirâtas, Siva's triumph over Tripura is the continual theme of the worshippers of Siva. In either fable we may recognise the signs of Arian conquest over Nishâda races. In the north-west, the Nishâda had been driven into the deserts of Sugdh and Merwar as early as the times of the Veda, where the Sarasvati marks the "iron gate" between Âryas and Nishádas. In the south-east we see the cities of the Nishâda burnt by Siva; in the north-east the Kirâtas are eaten by the bird of Vishnu; and in the south Ravana is punished and destroyed by Râma, the hero of the Ramâyana. Now Ptolemy knew a royal city beyond the Ganges, and he gives its name as Trilinga or Triglyphon. The former name is clearly Sanskrit, and it is the same which the Brahmâns gave to the Andhras, or the most northern branch of the Tamulians, on the east coast of the Dekhan: it is Trilinga, the modern Telugu. But such could not have been the name of these people, or of their capital before the Brahmanic conquest. Linga may have been Arian or not, but tri (three) is certainly Arian alone; and if Trilinga was a Sanskrit translation of a Tamulian word, we should in its original form expect, instead of the Arian tri, the corresponding Telugu numeral, which is modai and modaga. Now we read in Pliny (H. N. vi. 21.), "Insula in Gange est magnæ amplitudinis gentem continens unam, Modogalingam nomine. Ultra siti sunt Modubæ (Mutiba, Ait. Brah.), Molindæ (Pulinda, Ait. Brah.), Uberæ (Savara Ait. Brah. or Sauvîra ?), cum oppido ejusdem nominis magnifico; Galmodroesi, Preti, Calissæ (Kalinga ?), Sasuri, Passalæ, Colubæ (Kaulûbha, Lassen, ii. 206.), Orxulæ, Abali, Taluktæ. Rex horum. peditum L. M., equitum IV. M., elephantorum CCCC in armis habet. Validior deinde gens Andaræ (Andhra, Ait. Brah.), plurimis vicis, XXX. oppidis, quæ muris turribusque muniuntur," etc. Should not this one nation, inhabiting what is called a large island in the Ganges, and having the name of Modogalinga, be again Trilinga, or at least the people of the Trilingas, i. e. Telugus? There is a difficulty about the "insula." But whatever was meant by it, certain it is that, in Pliny's time, a national name, Modogalinga, was known near the mouth of the Ganges, and in the immediate neigh-

bourhood of the Andhra, or the Northern Telugus. The names of the neighbouring nations, also, such as Mutibas and Pulindas, are known in the Aitareya Brahmana as outcast nations on the frontiers of Âryâvarta, and as the cursed descendants of the sons of Visvâmitra.* There is another word, either Tamulian, or at least a Tamulian corruption of a Sanskrit original, which proves the presence of the Tamulians in the Dekhan as early as the time of Solomon. That the Ophir of the Bible is Abhîra or the country near the mouth of the Indus, is firmly established by the fact that some of the articles which Solomon received from Ophir are indigenous to India, and in some cases found in no other country, for instance, sandal-wood, algumîm, Sk. valgu; and that the names of these articles, which are foreign, or non-Semitic, can be explained by a reference to Sanskrit. Lassen's "Indian Antiquities" (i. 538.) leaves no doubt on this point. Now sandal-wood is obtained on the coast of Malabar, and therefore points to the Dekhan. But the Hebrew name of peacocks, tuki-im, is simply Malabar, where togei is the word for peacock. This is again derived or corrupted from the Sk. *sikhin*, but its occurrence in the book of Kings under its Tamulian garb, shows that at a very early period the eastern coast of the Dekhan belonged to the Tamulian Nishâdas. That the Brahmans had driven them back beyond the mouths of the Ganges and Lohita before the Christian era, is proved by the Sanskrit names of these localities at the time when they were collected by the Greeks, and it is highly significant that even the southernmost promontory of the Dekhan, Cape Comorin, was known to Ptolemy and the author

* These outcast nations are not fixed in their localities like the Arians. We find Pulindas where the Aravali mountains join the Pariyâtra, near Guzerate, and again, where the Vindhya bends toward Pataliputra, between the Keimur and Korair mountains we find Pulindas. Why should the Greeks not have heard their name near the mouths of the Ganges and the Lohita? We recognise Andhras and Trilingas to where the Arian Oriyas drove them from the coast. Why should the Triglypton of the Greeks, which is as near a translation of Trilinga as possible, be too far east for a Telugu kingdom in those early times? The other etymology of Trilinga, which Ellis gives, and Lassen adopts, seems much too Brahmanic, if Trilinga is an old national name. And that it was so, we cannot doubt; for Ptolemy knew it not only as Triglypton, but as Trilingon also. If, therefore, to repeat, Pliny knew a nation in the immediate neighbourhood of the Andhras by the name of Modogalinga, whatever he meant by "insula," it fixes the Telugu name and the Telugu language near the mouths of the Ganges and the Lohita at about the beginning of the Christian era.

of the Periplus, not by a Tamulic name, but as Κομάρια, ἄκρον καὶ πόλις; this Κομάρια being, as Prof. Wilson has shown, the Sanskrit name Kumârî, the Virgin, the wife of Siva.

§ 2. *Geographical Distribution of the Tamulic Nishâdas.*

In the Tamulic languages, therefore, we may recognise the most ancient dialect spoken in India; and spoken there long before the arrival of the Arians, which, however, cannot be placed after 1500 B. C. There is no reason to suppose that the peninsula south of the Vindhya mountains had not been occupied by these Nishâdas until they felt the pressure of the immigrating Arians in the north. Nishâdas were probably spread over the whole of India. They seem to have had kingdoms and capitals in the most favoured spots of the country, and the resistance they offered to the Arian gods shows that they could not have been without a certain amount of civilisation. This stratum of native population was broken by the Arians, absorbed in the centre, scattered towards west and east, and violently pressed together in the south. Everything agrees with this supposition. We find the Dekhan occupied entirely by aboriginal races, with only a small and late sprinkling of Brahmanic blood. Civilisation there is Brahmanic, and the native languages are full of Sanskrit vocables; but the grammar has resisted, and language has thus retained its independence. In the west there are traces of Nishâdas from the Sarasvati and Drishadvati down to the mouth of the Indus. Lassen's map, where the Nishâda races are marked with blue, exhibits the whole as clearly as possible. Where the Sarasvati disappears before it could join the Indus, we have in the earliest times traces of the Nishâdas; for the Sarasvati, the sacred frontier river of the sons of Manu, was fabled to disappear in the desert, that the Nishâdas might not see it. Along the Indus, Arian civilisation has made but little progress; and whatever was done there, belongs to the Vaidik times more than to the later periods of Indian history. In later times, the Ganges and its tributaries carried off with them toward the south-east the whole stream of Arian immigrants. When afterwards no longer the Sarasvati and Sindhu, but the Yamunâ became the frontier stream of Arian conquest, there again, on the south-western limits of the Gangetic system in the

valleys tributary to the Yamunâ and Gangâ, we find the seats of the Nishâdas in the impermeable fastnesses of the Dandaka forest. Even north of the Gangâ a Nishâda king, a vassal of the kings of Oude, is known in the Râmâya*ṇ*a. Still later, when the Vindhya also was crossed by the Aryas, and the Narmadâ and Tapati stood in the place of the Gangâ and Yamunâ, on the Satpura mountains, or still more south, in the Raivata chain, we again find the retreating masses of the Nishâdas, together with Mle*kkh*as, and also in the immediate neighbourhood of the Kolagiri, or the Kole mountains.

Under Greek names again, we may recognise the former more northern stations of these Tamulians. Where the Sarasvati is supposed to have joined the Indus in ancient times as the sixth river of the Penjab, south of Bhavalpur, the *Ś*ûdra population is marked by the name of Sydri in Ptolemy. Another well-known name of the lowest tribes was *K*andâla. This also seems to have been originally an ethnic name, for the Κάνδαλοι were known to Ptolemy, together with the Bhills, south of the Narmadâ, that is to say, in the Satpura mountains—the very places where the Bhills, the Phylittæ of Ptolemy, have maintained themselves to the present day. The Paharias of Rajmahál and Bhagalpur, have kept their homes in the Parsvanâtha hills, formerly the seat of the Pundras, and to the present day, a Paharia of Rajmahál can converse with the Bhills and Gonds on the frontier of Berar (Lassen, i. 368.); thus proving that they are all the scattered fugitives of one and the same conquered army.

We may look on the watershed between the Ganges and the rivers of the Dekhan, as the broad line where Arian civilisation made front and halted. This Vindhya chain, however, is not to be regarded as a straight line running from Guzerate to Orissa, but rather as a winding mountain-enclosure, which beginning nearly at Delhi, runs towards the south, as the Aravalî chain — a screen against the sands of Merwar. Near Guzerate, it turns eastward, or rather is continued in this new direction by the Pariyâtra range, which connects the Aravalî with the Vindhya proper. The Vindhya then runs in a decided angle towards the north, and closes the basin of the Ganges near Pataliputra. These two lines, one drawn from Delhi to the Pariyâtra, the other from the Pariyâtra to Patna, enclose a territory which sends all its waters westward and N.-westward into the Ganges, or rather

into its right arm, the Yamunâ. For one southern stream only, the Sona, reaches the Gangetic basin after the junction of Ganges and Jumna. The waters which run from the southern declivities of this mountain range towards the Dekhan, are divided, nearly in the centre, by the Rikshavat (Uxentus). From the Rikshavta, two ranges run to the west, first, the Satpura range, which forms the southern shore of the Narmadâ, the northern being the Vindhya, and secondly the Raivatan mountains, which collect the southern feeders of the Tapati, its northern feeders being supplied by the southern side of the Satpura range. Toward the east, or rather north-east, the Rikshavat is continued by several mountain clusters, which stand like buttresses to support the back of the Vindhya. They are chiefly known as the Amarakantaka, the Korair, the Bikeri, Malagiri, Gumaghatta, Parsvanâtha or Rajmahal mountains. These stem off the waters from the Ganges, and send them into the Mahânadi and Godavarî.

The absence of Sanskrit names and Arian cities within the whole territory which has for its base a line not very distant from the bed of the Yamunâ, and which is enclosed by an arch formed by the Aravali, Pariyâtra, Vindhya and Rajmahal mountains, shows that the main army did not press strongly on this position. Detached forces penetrated beyond, but principally along the coasts, not in the centre of the country. The Vindhya mountains, through which the southern feeders of the Yamunâ and Ganges break their course, offered a safe retreat for races who disliked the contact of Arian society. All along the Vindhya, therefore, we find in ancient times from west to east, Sydri, Abhiri, Phylittæ, Kandali, Molindæ, and Sabaræ; in modern times, Minas, Meras, Chitas, Ahirs, Koles, Bhills, Khonds, Gonds and Sourahs. Their strongholds are regions composed of lofty and rugged mountains, impenetrable forests, swampy woodlands and arid wastes, interspersed with extensive tracts of open and productive plains, but possessing a climate in many districts highly pestilential, like the Terais in the Subhimalayas. Even now but little is known of these tribes, and their languages have hardly been explored. But wherever attention has been paid to any dialects, they betray a decided relationship with Tamulic. Ellis was the first to point out that the idiom of the mountaineers of Rajmahal, close on the Ganges, if not of the same

radical derivation, abounds in terms common to Tamil and Telugu. The Rajmahali words collected by the Rev. M. Hurder, at Bhagalpur, leave no doubt as to the correctness of this supposition; and the Uraon words collected by Col. Ouseley, exhibit nearly the same dialect, though I do not know its proper habitat. It must be considerably south-east of Rajmahal, almost within the Gond territory. The language of the Gonds, which occupies so large a space comprised between the Vindhya range on the north, the eastern chain of Ghats, and a line connecting these, drawn from the mouth of the Godavary to the centre of the valley of the Narmadâ—was first suspected of a Tamulian origin in 1842, by M. Loesch, a German missionary. The same subject was alluded to by Mr. D. F. McLeod, in 1844, and the first list of words was published by Dr. Manger in the Journal of A. S. B., in March, 1847. I have not seen either of these articles, but the results to be obtained from them, were published in a highly interesting essay by Mr. W. Elliot November, 1847. The Gond dialects will henceforth be classed together with the Tamulic languages.

§ 3. *Separate Class of Munda Dialects.*

It has commonly been supposed that the chain of these uncultivated Tamulic dialects could be traced across the Dekhan without interruption from the Rikshavat mountains to Pariyâtra, the connecting links being furnished by the idioms of the Koles and Bhills. Of the original Bhill dialects no specimens have as yet been published, so far as I am aware; nay, it seems as if the Bhills had adopted the language of their conquerors to an extent obliterating all traces of their original speech. Some of the Kole dialects have been collected by Captain Haughton But in the lists printed by Mr. Hodgson, I observe an agreement between Rajmahal, Uraon, and Gondi words, and, so far as words are concerned, I should say that the dialects spoken by the Rajmahal-Koles, and the Uraons, are of the same family as the Gond, and, therefore, of Tamulic origin. But this cannot be said of the Sinhbhum, Sontal, Bhumij, and Mundala Koles, though Mr. Hodgson inclines to believe that all these dialects belong to the same class. He says, "the affinities of these

tongues are very striking, so much so, that the five first (Sinhbhum, Sontal, Bhumij, Uraon, and Mundala Kole) may be safely denominated dialects of the great Kole language; and through the Uraon speech we trace without difficulty the further connection of the language of the Koles with that of the hill men of the Rajmahal and Bhaugalpur ranges. Nor are there wanting obvious links between the several tongues above enumerated and that of the Gonds." Here I must differ from Mr. Hodgson, although I confess the materials hardly suffice for arguing the point satisfactorily. But taking his own lists of words, I can see indeed many coincidences between Uraon, Rajmahali, and Gondi on one side, and Sinhbhum, Sontal, Bhumij, and Mundala words on the other, but none whatever between these two classes. I, therefore, suppose that in the dialects of the last four tribes, we have traces of a language spoken in India before the Tamulian conquest, and I feel confirmed in this supposition by finding that these dialects are the same as the Ho, on which we possess a most interesting memoir published by Lieutenant Tickell, in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, 1840. The four Kole dialects and the Ho are spoken in the same locality with the other Kole dialects belonging to the Tamulic family. But the numerals, the pronouns, and the grammatical system (known of this dialect only), differ strongly from the Tamulic; though at the same time, they do not show any traces of relationship with either Arian, or Bhotiya, or Taï languages. The race by which these dialects are used may have merged into the Tamulic in places where both have been living together for some time. Both are, therefore, promiscuously called Koles. But historically as well as physiologically there is sufficient evidence to show that two different races, the Tamulic and an earlier race, came in contact in these regions, whither both fled before the approach of a new civilisation.

Traces of this earlier race, as distinct from the Tamulic Koles, have been found by Lieutenant Tickell from the jungles of Ramgurh (near Hazaribaugh) to the south and southward, along Moherbunj, Keonjur, Gangpur, down to the confines of Buna Nagpur. Here they are distinguished from the Gonds by the name of "Kirkee." Their colonies, as described by the Gonds, are insulated, semi-barbarous, and confined to the wildest parts of that country. The

country lying north and north-east of Gondwana, and west of Gangpur, and south of Surgujia, is in all probability inhabited by the main stock whence these small settlements have wandered The inhabitants of Chota Nagpur are also called Koles, but Lieutenant Tickell describes them as a totally distinct race, differing from the Hos not only in language, but in manners and origin. The Koles of Chota Nagpur are properly named Oraóus (the same as Hodgson's Uraons). They are of the same lineage as the Gonds and other uncivilised Tamulian races. The Uraons still remember their former habitation west of the Sone, and they ascribe their transmigration across that river towards the south-east to the inroads of Hindus from the vicinity of the Ganges. Now the Uraons found other people already in possession of the country into which they were migrating. These people, called themselves "Munda," which as an old ethnic name, I have adopted for the common appellation of the aboriginal Koles. Kole is too general a name, because it is applied promiscuously to uncivilised races, and has become the English term for porters (Coolee, or Kholee, or Kuli's) all over India. It is said that the Mundas and Uraons lived peaceably together until the Brahmans reached their country. The political and religious oppression exercised by the Brahmans, drove the Mundas from their country; a great portion traversing the hills and forests of Kœhang, passed out eastward into the open tract now called Singbhum and the Kolehan.

Here they found a people called Bhuians, with whom they shared the country. A race of Bengali Brahmans, called Sarawaks, who endeavoured to establish their supremacy on the Kolehan also, was driven back by the Hos and Bhuians in common. But as the Kolehan was lying in the route of hosts of pilgrims from Patna and Benares to Jaggernath, other adventurers tried to possess themselves of these fertile tracts of country. In this some Marwari Rajputs succeeded at last, and after the total discomfiture of the Bhuians, the Marwari Singbhunsis and the Hos divided the country, the Hos withdrawing from the rich open plains, now called Singbhum, into the country now called Hodesum or Kolehan. It is of these Mundas that Lieutenant Tickell has given so accurate an account. He maintains that they are related with the Mundas of Chutia Nagpur, although many

of these form part of the good-tempered, but ugly-figured Dhangurs seen in Calcutta. The Mundas of Hodesum, on the contrary, have preserved their race in greater purity, and are described as men eminently handsome, "with figures like the Apollo Belvedere." The Mundas of Hodesum shave the hair off the forehead, and wear it tied behind, a custom which may account for their name "Munda," *i. e.* one who shaves his head. The other Mundas wear their locks dishevelled, or clubbed at the top of the head, transfixed with a long pin or comb, by which they are at once distinguished. For further distinguishing marks between the Hos and Uraons, or as they are also called, the Lurka-Koles and Koles, I must refer to the two first portions of Lieutenant Tickell's Memoir. My own reasons for distinguishing between the Ho language and the Tamulian dialects are principally derived from grammatical sources. The dictionaries of the Munda and Tamulian languages differ more than could be the case with cognate dialects. But it is again from the numerals and pronouns only that we can derive a full conviction on this point. Lastly, we have declension and conjugation, which, as we may trust Lieutenant Tickell's account, are decisive as to the non-Tamulic character of these dialects.

§ 4. *Languages belonging to the Tamulic Branch.*

This broken line of Tamulic outposts once crossed, we are in the midst of the Tamulic division of languages. The encroachment of Arian Dialects, as the Mahratti and Konkani on the western, and the Oriya on the eastern coast, show the course which Arian civilisation, hemmed in in the middle by the Vindhya range, took on each side of the Dekhan. The Mahratta conquest, which belongs to a much later period, secured to the dominion of Arian speech a large portion of country east of the Ghats, and surrounded by the Rikshavat, Satpura, and Raivata mountains. After this, we have, on the coast and in the interior of the Dekhan, the following Tamulic dialects:—First, Tuluva; then Malayalam, on the Malabar coast as far as Cape Comorin; then, in the whole tract from the western Ghats to the eastern coast, Tamil; and, after this, until we reach again the territory of the Gond, the Telugu. The central portion,

between the Tuluva in the west and the Telugu in the east, belongs to the Karnata or Canarese language. Besides these large lingual provinces, smaller districts must be assigned to several popular dialects. In the Nilghiri hills, for instance, we find the Todas, whose language becomes the more interesting the less it has been affected by any influence of Sanskrit grammar and literature. In the Tulu country the Koragas and Malekudias speak similar languages, as has been stated by Weigle in a very interesting article on the Canarese language, published in the Journal of the German Oriental Society. Other dialects of the same kind are mentioned by Professor Lassen (Indian Antiquities, i. 364.)

The geographical position of these languages and dialects, however, is so well known, and has been so frequently discussed in the works of Ellis, Wilkes, Wilson, and Lassen, that little of importance could here be added.

§ 5. *Character of the Tamulic Class of Languages.*

Nor is it necessary to prove that all these languages and dialects are held together by the ties of a close lingual relationship, for this is one of the few facts in comparative philology, which, after it had once been stated, has never been called into question. Only one remark remains to be made on this point, and it is more of an historical than philological nature. It has been pointed out once before, that we have no right to suppose the Tamulic Nishâdas to have been mere barbarians when they first came in conflict with their Arian conquerors; that, on the contrary, the destruction of their cities, and even the character of their leaders as represented, in the most hostile spirit, in Sanskrit poetry*, give evidence of a former civilisation crushed and scattered by the superior power of the Âryas. This view is confirmed by the close relationship which unites these numerous languages spoken over a surface as large as that of the Romanic dialects in Europe. There is a certain kind of similarity between languages, which can only be explained on the supposition

* Râvana, the Râkshasa king of Lanka, conquered by Râma in the Dekhan, is a god worshipped by Sub-Himalayan tribes, as for instance, the Hayús. J. A. S. B. 1840, p. 611

that they had once a common historical centre. Thus, even if we had no knowledge of the former existence of Latin as a political language, the resemblance of the Romanic dialects would force us to admit a political concentration of language previous to the time when this fixed and settled speech became broken up into various dialects. This resemblance between secondary dialects is a different one from that which may be observed between primary dialects, such as precede the formation of every political language. These primary dialects are earlier than the κοινή, just as mountain streams are earlier than rivers; the secondary dialects, on the contrary, are later, just as channels are later than lakes. Among savage tribes, where these primary dialects have never been called together into a literary system, we find, as in America, Africa, and Cochin-China, that there exists so perplexing a variety of idioms, that the inhabitants of neighbouring villages are unintelligible to one another; and, in the absence of all checks on the caprices and peculiarities of individuals, old forms are changed and new forms introduced by every individual with such recklessness as to obscure for ever the traces of a primitive community of speech. In the history of the Arian family we can distinguish between several lingual centralisations. After one dialect has attracted or absorbed the floating elements of other popular dialects, and been raised to the dignity of a classical language, we see it again diverge into new branches. Latin first absorbs all the idioms of Italy, and after it has become the language of the then civilised world, it is broken up in turn into many dialects. If this political centralisation of Italy had not intervened, and if no Roman empire had brought the provinces of Italy under one common sway, the dialects of the Umbrians in the north of Italy would have developed themselves and become so different from that of the Sabines in Lower Italy as to appear to us a totally different language, differing from the Oscan at least as much as Greek from Slavonic. But these two dialects, the Oscan and Umbrian, were themselves political and literary languages, not to be compared with the unsettled idioms of savage tribes such as we find in America. If, then, we imagine a state of things where the different provinces, nay the towns and villages in the separate valleys of Italy, had each retained its lingual independence, each continuing to use its local dialect for

centuries, without any political intercourse, or common literature, political, religious, or legal, we should then find, as we do in South America, almost as many distinct languages as there are settlements. Kircher fixes the number of languages known to be spoken in South America toward the end of the seventeenth century, at five hundred; and in most cases the people who speak such idioms are said to be unintelligible to their nearest neighbours. Here, therefore, in America, we should say, that the immense diversity of dialects shows the absence of a previous political centralisation. Now, on exactly the same ground, it follows that in the Dekhan the great similarity between the different Tamulic dialects can only be the result of a former period in the history of the Tamulian speech, during which its character became fixed, grammatically and etymologically. Such a process we can only ascribe to the influence of a more comprehensive civilisation, and a more extended political and literary intercourse than is generally ascribed to the aboriginal inhabitants of India. The Tamulic dialects agree not only in roots, not only in pronouns and numerals, but in derivative words which must have been known to all before they began to diverge and grow into new dialects. Perhaps it will be possible to fix on one of these dialects as the eldest of the Tamulic sisters, and derive from it some of these words which are common to all. But even then our conclusion would be the same; for the adoption of words from one dialect into another necessitates equally the admission of a political and literary intercourse, which can only take place during a period of advancing civilisation.

Another reason for supposing the Tamulic languages considerably advanced in their literary capabilities before their struggle with the Sanskrit began, may be discovered in their successful resistance against the introduction of Sanskrit elements into their grammar Although the dictionary of the Tamulic languages is as full of Sanskrit words as English is of Norman, yet the Tamulians did not give up their grammatical independence. And even the words which were adopted from Sanskrit had to submit to the genius of these dialects. With the exception of those adopted ready made, and simply transferred from Sanskrit, as Latin expressions are in English, the majority of Sanskrit terms in the Tamulic dialects has been

changed to such an extent, that it is difficult sometimes to discover their foreign origin. Words simply taken from Sanskrit are, according to Ellis, called "Tatsama," i. e. equal to Sanskrit. For instance, sampadu in Telugu is the Sanskrit sampad (fortune).

Appa in Telugu is the Sanskrit âpah (water).
Payasu in Telugu is the Sanskrit payas (milk).

Words adopted from Sanskrit with considerable phonetic changes are called "Tadbhava," i. e. produced from Sanskrit. Some of the changes which these words have undergone must be ascribed to the spoken or vulgar Sanskrit, for they depend on the same rules by which Sanskrit words are modified in the Prakrit dialects. These, the spoken or vulgar dialects of the Sanskrit, would be the most natural channels through which Sanskrit words could have reached the Tamulians. And as in French we find frequently the same Latin word under two different forms, of which the one (as for instance "rédemption") might be called a tatsama, the other (as for instance "rançon") tadbhava, instances occur in the Tamulic languages where the same Sanskrit word has been adopted under two different forms. Parva in Sanskrit means a knot or joint, and, with particular reference to the moon, it means the day of the full and new moon. As these were festival days, pabba and habba in Canarese* mean a "festival." But in the learned language of the Brahmans parvan came also to signify a chapter or book, and in this sense it is used in Canarese parva, section of a book. Instances where Tadbhava words in Telugu seem to have passed through Prakrit channels are the following:—

Sanskrit.	*Prakrit.*†	*Telugu.*
brahma	bamha (Vararuki, v. 47.)	bomma (Brahma).
brâhmaṇas	bambhadu (Abhîra)	bapadu (a Brahman).

* Cf. Weigle, Journal of the German Oriental Society, II. 265.

† The Prâkrit forms are given on the authority of Ellis, in his introduction to Campbell's Teloogoo grammar. Ellis must have availed himself, however, of other sources besides Vararuki. Where his forms agree with Vararuki I have added a reference to the excellent edition of this grammarian by my friend Mr. Cowell, at Oxford. Where they differ, or where they do not occur at all in Vararuki, Ellis may have followed Hemakandra, or other authorities, as he was too accurate a scholar to have formed them merely on general analogy.

Sanskrit.	*Prakrit.*	*Telugu.*
dvîpas	divo (Maharâshtri)	divi (island).
yasas	*g*aso (Varar, II. 31.)	asamu (glory).
prati*gn*âtam	pa*dinn*âdam (*S*auraseni)	pannidama (promise).
nedish*th*am	nedistam (Mâgadhi)	nestamu (friendship).
râmâ	lâmâ (*ibid.*)	lema (woman).
trilingas	tilingo (Varar, vi. 56.)	telugu *or* tenugu.
svar*n*am	sannam (Pais*â*k*i*)	sonna (gold).
suvar*n*am	panno (Kulica-pais*a*k*i*)	ponnu (gold).

It will appear, even from this short list, that some phonetic changes, generally ascribed to the influence of the Telugu, can be traced back to Prakritic corruptions, but that, at the same time, the Telugu went beyond the limits of the Prakrit.

Sanskrit words form so large a portion of the Tamulic dictionaries, that they are no longer considered as foreign words. Foreign words, according to Telugu grammarians, are called "Anyades*î*ya," i. e. of another country; and the Appakavîyam explains their origin in the following manner:—"The natives of Andhra (i. e. Telugus) having resided in various countries using Telugu terms conjointly with those of other countries, these have become Andhra terms of foreign origin."

What remains, after subtracting all these extraneous ingredients, is called D*e*s*y*a, i. e. native words. Thus it is said, in a stanza of the Adharvana Vyâkarana with regard to Telugu:—"All the words which are in use among the several races who are aborigines of the country of Andhra' which are perfectly clear and free from all obscurity; these shine forth to the world as the pure native speech of Andhra (*s*uddha . andhra . des*y*am)." There is only one more distinction made, between what are called native and vulgar words. The latter are termed g r â m y a, i. e. belonging to villages, and explained by the Appakavîyam as follows:—"Such Telugu words as are commonly used by rustic folk are known as g r â m y a m; these lose some of their regular letters, and are not found in poetry, unless, as in abusive language, the use of them cannot be avoided."

If we now look at the grammar of the Tamulic languages, we shall find at once that we have before us a system of declension and

conjugation much more developed than in the Bhotiya dialects. The forms are more settled according to general grammatical categories; and although the cases, as in all Turanian languages, are formed by postpositions and are, therefore, liable to great variety, yet there exists a formal distinction between the casus rectus and obliquus. This base of the casus obliquus and the terminations of the cases, when brought in contact, are liable to phonetic changes similar to the changes of Sandhi in Sanskrit and other Arian languages, and both coalesce into one grammatical whole. This gives rise, as in some of the more advanced members of the Finnic and Tataric branches, to some real grammatical cases, which become technical, and are used in preference to mere compounds: particularly in the modern and spoken dialects, where the number of independent postpositions expressive of case is much smaller than in the ancient languages. A still greater advance toward grammatical forms is made in the conjugation. Here we find moods and tenses formed by the addition of letters and syllables which by themselves have no more meaning than any termination in Greek or Latin. The persons are expressed by pronominal terminations, and these terminations vary according to the tenses, in the same manner as in Greek and Latin. A grammar like this could only be the grammar of a civilised people. It shows signs of wear and tear, and in what it has retained as well as in what it has given up, we can discern the working of a spirit of wise economy.

Ninth Section.

Comparison of the Tamulic and Ugric Languages.

If, therefore, we look for analogies to the Tamulic grammar in other branches of the Turanian family we should naturally take those which, like the Tamulic, have reached a certain degree of grammatical perfection. This grammatical perfection, as was stated before, consists first in the production of those formal elements which are wanting altogether in family languages, such as Chinese, and which are extremely scarce as yet in the lower Nomad languages, as in the Tungusic or in some of the Gangetic, the Lohitic,

and Taï class. Secondly, in the reduction of these formal elements to certain limits; in the introduction of distinct grammatical categories; and in the suppression of many artifices which at first suggest themselves as means of expressing all the minutiæ of the most complex relations, but which, in the progress of the intellect, are found nôt only useless, but cumbersome, for the practical purposes of speech. We should, therefore, naturally look to the Tataric or Ugric, and not to the Tungusic or Mongolic branches, if we expected to find a similarity between the grammar of the Tamulic and that of any other branch of the Turanian family.

But there are other indications, which lead us in the same direction.

Though it is generally admitted that most members of the Turanian family separated before their numerals had become fixed and unchangeable, and although, at first sight, we discover hardly any traces of similarity in the numerals of languages so nearly allied as Turkish and Hungarian, it is the duty of the comparative philologist to search for points where any two branches of this prolific family may have preserved faint indications of their former unity. As the Finns are the most northern, and the Tamulians the most southern colonies of this Asiatic race, both were probably the last to separate from their common stock. Both, also, have been removed for many centuries from contact with the ever floating and changing population of Central Asia, and thus may each have preserved the impress of the language as it was spoken by the remaining nucleus of the Turanians long after the separation of the Taï, Malay, and Bhotîya branches in the South, and of the Tungusic, Mongolic, and Tataric branches in the North had taken place.

Now, if we compare the Ugric and Tamulic Numerals, they certainly do not seem to offer much encouragement. The words for one, two, and three, are evidently derived from more than one root in the Tamulic, as well as in the Ural-Altaic languages. These three first Numerals, however, are liable to change and fluctuation in languages the common origin of which admits of no doubt. They are, so to say, the most concrete Numerals, expressive of more than abstract quantity, and therefore capable of being rendered in various manners. Thus one has two roots in most European languages;

Sk. ekas and prathamas; the former expressing singleness, the latter priority. "Two," also, can be expressed by duo and ambo, by pair, couple, twin, and the like. One, two, three, are words, and not only numerals; they are declinable, therefore, in languages where, as for instance in Latin, the other numerals are so no longer. This shows their vitality and concreteness, or, if I may so say, their uninterrupted self-consciousness. Now, as we have frequently seen before, words which continue to be understood by the genius of a language are more liable to organic change and natural variation than others whose sound and meaning must simply be taken for granted. It is possible, therefore, that the three first numerals may differ, owing to that power of renovation and reproduction inherent in Turanian languages, while the rest may yet have been preserved, or at least have been exposed only to that influence of phonetic corruption to which such mummified words are most exposed.

But although it would be in vain to attempt to re-establish the original root from which all the names for "one" in the Ugric and the Tamulic languages could be derived, we need not shut our eyes to some cases where one or the other base for one, two and three, occurs north and south of the Himalaya.

The most general base for one in the Ural-Altaic languages is AKAT, which reminds us forcibly of the Hebrew ekhad, the Pehlevi achad, and even the Sanskrit ekas. Professor Schott traces this base in the Lapponic akt and akta, the Teheremiss iktä; in the Finnish yht and yksi, changed by the Esthonians into üts. In the Ostiakian there remains but öt, from which the Syrianian ötik may be derived. Other Ostiakian forms are it and i. The Teheremissians have, besides the full forms iktä, and iktät, a shorter form ik, and the same abbreviation has taken place in the ök of the Syrianes, and the äk of the Voguls. The egy of the Magyars, and the väike of the Mordvines require no explanation, the addition of an initial v being of frequent occurrence; nor can there be any doubt that väi and vä, which equally occur in the dialect of the Mordvines, are but phonetical varieties of the same type. Instead of an additional v, which we find in the Mordvinian, the Mongolian adds an initial n, and forms nige, one. This nige may be said to stand for an original jigc, as several words in the Finnic languages show an interchange

of j and n at the beginning of words. In the Tungusic languages the form jeg does really exist, and is used to form the word for nine, as "ten minus one."

Now, in the Tamulic class we find at least the Telugu oka, which might be compared. But, going back to the most ancient representative of Turanian speech, we can point to the Gyami iku, the Chinese *'i* and yut. The Mongolic forms in n (nige) find analogies in the Taï nüng and lüng; and in numerous members of the Bhotîya family the combination of guttural and dental may be traced as having, in various combinations, the power of one. I only mention the Nága akhet, and khatu, the Kuki katka, the Miri ako, as types from which many more of these Gangetic and Lohitic numerals can be derived. That all can not, is hardly an objection, if we consider that the Turkish also shows in its bir (one) a base independent of the old AKAT; and that a third radical for one must be admitted to exist in the Tungusic um, which explains the Manju emu, and several cognate expressions in Mongolic and Tcheremissian, where on, in, and en occur with the general meaning of unity or separation. This on forms again a chief element in the Tamulic names for one.

Some of the changes by which AKAT is reduced to i may seem violent, but they are so not in theory, but in reality. If we find that languages so closely connected as Mordvinian and Tcheremissian allow themselves forms like iktät, iktä, ik, väike and vä, and that even in the same language such variants as öt, *i*, and ja occur, all that we can do is to state the fact in order to show that the Finnic yksi and the Hungarian egy need not be considered as words different in their origin. Besides, although the rules affecting the interchange of letters have not yet been brought to that degree of completeness and certainty which in the Arian languages makes it easy to prove with full evidence the common origin of such words as Sanskrit AHAM and English I, yet general analogies have here been discovered, and in following Professor Schott through his admirable analysis of the Turanian Numerals we are never left without a precedent for the changes which he wishes us to admit.

The base which in a former paragraph was obtained as the most likely source of all Bhotîya words for two, NYA, seems at first to stand without any corresponding forms in the Ural-Altaic languages.

We shall find, however, the most luculent proofs that in the earliest state of the Ural-Altaic languages NYA was the etymon of "two," and that it was supplanted by a secondary form (AKAT, preceded by a guttural), in a manner that reminds us of the relation between Sanskrit "tur" in turya, the third, and *k*atur, four. This new base for two K + AKAT, is liable to the same modifications as AKAT, and hence it is sufficient to point out the correspondence between Finnish yksi, one, and kaksi, two.

Esthonïan üts, one, and kats, two.

Lapponian akt, one, and kvekt, two.

Lapponian oft, one, and guoft, two, Mordvin, kavto.

Vogulian ök, one, and Syrian. kik, two.

Tcherem. iktät, one, and koktat, two.

Ostiak. öt, one, kât, two, Vogulian, kit, Magyar ket.

The Turkish also, which has simply iki, for two, shows traces of an original initial guttural, which, as in many other words, was dropped in the progress of this language. The Turkish word for twenty, therefore, is not only igirmi, but yigirmi; and yigir being afterwards contracted into jir and sir, explains the Tchuwashian sirim, and Yakute sürbä, twenty.

These forms have no analogies south of the Himâlaya. The only approach to the Tamulic radical for two, which, in contra-distinction of on, the term for one, seems to have been er, may be discovered in Mongolic and Tungusic dialects. The Mongolic has the initial k, and it forms its words for two, as kuyar, and contracts it into kur, in kur-in, twenty. This kur exists in Tungusic as jur; in Mandshu as jue, 2. In the Mandshu or-in, twenty, the initial k has been lost altogether, as before in the Turkish igir-mi. An inter-comparison, however, of the Mongolic and Ugric words for two shows that the characteristic and significative power lies in this k, while yar, in Mongolic, and kta, in the Tchudic numerals, are secondary elements. This is still further confirmed by a reference to their terms for twenty, when, as in Syrianian ky-f, Mordvinian ko-ms, Vogulian ku-s, Ostiakian chu-s, and Hungarian hu-sz, the simple guttural expresses the value of two. In Tcheremissian kok-lu, the full word for two has been employed; and the same applies to the Tungusic jur-men, the Mongolic chur-in, and the Turkish yigir-mi.

The words for three which had preserved so many traces of a common origin in the Chinese and Bhotîya languages allow of hardly any inter-comparison, when we look to the Tamulic and Ural-Altaic branches. In the latter, the primitive base of three might be represented as KR, with a tendency to add a final labial b or m. With this base we can explain the Mongolic gur-b-an, the Magyar har-om and charm, the Vogulian kor-om, and the Ostiakian kol-ym. Again, the Lapponian, Esthonian, and Finnish kolm. The Syrianian kuyim leads naturally to the Tcheremissian kum. Professor Schott connects Tataric forms like ol-tuf, thirty, with the Ugric kol, appealing to the frequent loss of an initial guttural in Tataric. The Tungusic el-an also would thus be accounted for. The final l, which corresponds to an r, and which in Ostiakian is represented by d (chudem) and dl (kodlem and cholym), may become a palatal sound; because l, taking a mouillé pronunciation, has the same influence on a preceding t as i or j in "nation," and in this manner ol or odl (originally kodl or kor) may emerge again as the Tataric uch and üts. Thus the Tungusic el-an, three, and got-in, thirty, would descend from the same root, as well as the Mongolic gur-ban, three, and guch-in, thirty. Guch would explain the Tataric uch, three; and Tataric ol-tuz, thirty, would receive its solution from the Tungusic el-an, three.

Although we have seen, before, that an initial k, before it is lost altogether, may take the sound of ch, j, sh, and s, and although the Tcheremissian kum, three, has been traced back to KR-M, it would hardly be possible to take our stand on these secondary forms, and to compare them with the Bhotîya base, SAM. The Tamulic words also for "three" must be left unexplained, in the present state of our knowledge, as the phonetic changes which are sanctioned by these languages have not hitherto been explored with sufficient accuracy.

We must now compare the numerals from four to seven, which alone can be considered as the common property of the Ugric and Turanic races. Before their first separation these races did not count beyond seven; and it is, therefore, one of the most characteristic features of the two classes of the Turanian family, that their words for eight and nine are compounds, expressing 10—2, and 10—1, like

the Latin duodeviginti and undeviginti. Some tribes of the Bodo never count beyond seven at the present day.*

The simplest form for "four" in the northern division of the Turanian family is found in the Tcheremissian nil. The base from which all other words for "four" were derived may, indeed, be represented by N I L or N A L. This explains the Mordvinian nile, and nilen, the Vogulian nila, and Ostiakian niïl. The final *l* of nil was liable to a mouillé pronunciation, which is naturally expressed by the palatal semivowel *j*. This explains the Finnish neljä, the Lapponian nielj, the Syrianian njolj. Now, we saw before that a final *l*, particularly one that is liable to this palatal softening, is interchangeable with dl and d (as kodlem, chudem, and kolym); and this must account for the Ostiakian njedla, and njeda. The Hungarian negy is pronounced nedj, and this, therefore, merely a phonetic variety of njedl.

The coincidences between these and the Tamulic words for "four" need no explanation. Tamil, Malabar, Gond, and Tuluva, have simply the same word, nalu; and the Canarese nalku and Telugu nalugu are less violent deviations than the Hungarian negy.

Professor Schott goes even beyond this, and considers the Mongolic, Tungusic, and Tataric words for four as derived from the same radical. Supposing this radical to have been nalk, he allows a transition of n into d (as in Sanskrit navan, Lithuanian devyni). He then explains the Tungusic düg-ün (Mandshu, duin), four, as a variety of dülg-ün; and, by substituting different final letters, he arrives even at the Turkish dürt, four, and the Mongolic dürb-en. The transition of a final lj into the palatal ch being established before, he likewise explains the Mongolic düch in düch-in, forty, as analogous with Turkish uch, three, instead of 'ulj. These combinations must rest on the authority of one who is, no doubt, better acquainted with the possible changes of Turanian words than any scholar in Europe.

"Five," if reduced to its radical elements in the Northern or Ural-Altaic division, is V I T. This coincides with the Lapponian vit; and the Syrianian vitj, Mordvinian väte, Ostiakian vet, are easily

* Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, 1849, p. 720.

traced to the same source. The loss of an initial v requires no explanation in Arian or Turanian dialects. Hence Hungarian öt, Vogulian ät, may be reconciled with the same root. A transition of t into s also has occurred more than once, and is confirmed here by the Finnish viisi, Esthonian wiis, and Tcheremissian vis. As in the mouth of a Basque, vivere is bibere, the Turkish besh also may enter into the same category. A Turkish sh is represented in Tchuvashian by l; hence pil-ik also has probably passed through the forms of vit, bit, vis, and besh.

In the Tamulic class I consider the Canarese and Telugu ayidu as mere amplifications of ed, a form not far distant of the Ostiakian vet and uet. The Tuluva ayinu, Tamil anju, Malabar inthu do not differ so much as to warrant the admission of a different radical.

"Six" was expressed, according to Professor Schott, by a modification of "three." Analogies exist in the Japan numerals mitsu, three, and mutsu, six; and, again, fitotsu, one, futatsu, two; jotsu, four, and jatsu, eight. Now, as the radical of three was KR or KL, changeable into KD, KDl, and KDj, Professor Schott maintains that this was raised to six by the addition of a final t, which t absorbs, in most cases, the final semivowel L or R, of the radical KR. In this manner he derives Ostiakian kut, Vogulian and Lappon. kot, Tcheremissian kut, Mordvinian koto, from a presupposed kurt or kutt, and by a transition of this final t into s, he accounts for Finnish kuusi, and Esthonian kuus. More difficult is the Turkish alty. As, however, in uch, three, the Turkish alone had sacrificed the initial k, we are justified in allowing the same process in what is only a modification of the radical three. We should then arrive at AR or AL, and the additional t of the six would give us the Turkish alty. If this last process is admitted, it need hardly be pointed out that an opening is gained for the Tamulic forms, which all point to AR as their common source.

"Seven," in its most abstract form, might be rendered by SAT. With this the Vogulian sat is identical; the Yakute settä nearly so; and the assibilation of the final t would account for Mordvinian and Syrianian sis-im, Esthonian seitse, Finnish seitse-mä. That a final s may be pronounced like a palatal, we saw before. and by this change we arrive at the Tchuvashian sichche, but we require the

same admission for an initial s, in order to explain the Lapponian chech. The initial letter alone has become palatal in the Turkish yedi, and in the Hungarian there remains but an initial h in het, seven.

Allowing the total loss of this h, we may compare the Tamil ezhu, and Telugu edu, of which elu in Canarese and Malabar, and al in Tuluva, are natural varieties.

The admission of SAT as a radical for seven, does not exclude the possibility that this SAT may be itself but a secondary form. For, although SAT suffices to explain most of the Turanian numerals, it does not explain such forms as the Ostiakian sabet (tabet, tlabet); and Professor Schott points out that, as in the Arian family septem has taken a secondary form set, which would suffice as the radical of French sept (pronounced set) Italian sette, Spanish siete, SAT also may be but a secondary radical as compared with SABAT. This would be a most extraordinary discovery, for it would actually restore the word for seven to so primitive a state, that not only the Turanian, but the Arian and Semitic languages might, in this case, be traced back to the very cradle of human speech.

Eight in Ugric is expressed by 10—2; nine by 10—1. The Syrianian kökjaamys, 8, is derived, according to Sjögren, from kök, 2, and jaamys, the elative of jaam. It means two taken out of ten. Although jaam, 10, in Syrianian is now represented by the (Russian?) das, it has been preserved in the Ostiakian jon.* Okmys, 9, according to Castrén, is derived from ötik and kym (10). The elative of kym would be kymys, which, together with ötik, is contracted into ökmys. In the same manner Sjögren derives the Finnish kahdeksan, 8, and yhde-ksan, 9, from kahde, 2, and yhde, 1, followed by ksan, which again is explained as the Ablative in san, of kym, 10.† I do not hesitate, therefore, to propose the same explanation for the Tamulic words for 8 and 9.

* Another Finnic scholar, Dr. Europæus, derives kökjaamys from kjam, a variety of the modern kämen or kjemen, 10; kämmen, in Finnic, meaning "hand." See Schott, p. 27.

† Professor Schott's derivation will be given hereafter. Dr. Europæus divides kah-deksan, yh-deksan, and endeavours to establish deksan as one of the most primitive words for "finger" and ten.

Two in Canarese is er|adu; ten hat-tu; eight entu.
Two in Tamil is ir|andu; ten pat-ta; eight etu.
One in Canarese is on|du; ten hat-tu; nine ombhattu.
One in Malabar is on|du; ten pat-thu; nine on-pathu.

The euphonic laws of the Tamulic languages have been too little explored to enable us to explain the contractions which have taken place in these compounds. But that they are compounds, and compounds formed on the same principles as those in Ugric, is palpable. Even if the elisions are without analogy, it would still be possible to go back for an explanation of these words to an earlier state of language, in which one and two were on and ar, and in which ten was tu instead of hat-tu, pat-tu, ba-da, &c. Indeed, I believe that wherever 8 and 9 have an identical element in their names, and where this element has any similarity with the names of ten, we may safely apply the same principle of formation which Sjögren and Castrén have established for the Ugric. In Mandshu, for instance, we find juan for 10, the same root we met before in Ugric. Now, jue in Mandshu is 2, and jakon is 8; emu is 1, and onyan is 9.

Humboldt discovered a similar process for expressing eight and nine in the Malay languages.

Professor Schott has treated this question in the most comprehensive manner in an Essay "On the Numerals in the Tschudic Class of Languages." I received one copy of it in time to avail myself of his suggestions while my own Essay was partly in print; and I subjoin the following abstract, containing all the evidences that can be brought to bear on this interesting feature of the Numerals of the Turanian family.

The first root for Ten, in the Tchudic languages, is T-S, or D-S. It occurs in the Syrianian DAS, 10; SIZIM-DAS, 70; KÖK-JAMYS-DAS, 80; OKMYS-DAS, 90; and in the Hungarian TIZ, 10. The same root, only contracted, appears in the Hungarian HAR-MIN-CZ, 30, instead of HARMIN-TIZ; and in HU-SZ, instead of HU-TIZ, 20. The Ostiakian CHUS, 20, Voguliun HU-S, and Syrianian KY-S, 20, are too like the Hungarian HU-SZ to admit of a different etymology.

The Turks used the same root, in "thirty,' which is OL-TUZ, and OTUZ; in Yakut OTUT; in Tchuvash VU-TUR.

The Hungarian NYOL-CZ, 8, and KILEN-CZ, show CZ= TIZ as the root for ten. NYOL was originally a name of "two;" but the root NYA, well known in Chinese and Bhotîya dialects, as the exponent of two, was used by other Turanian tribes as a Dual to express four. Thus it became fixed as "four" in the Altaic (and Tamulic) languages, while as "two" it was replaced by new words.

In the Ostiakian dialects, for instance, "four" is expressed by NJETLA, NJEDLA, NJETA, NJEDA, NJET, and NJEL.

Eight is expressed by NJIGEDLA-CH, NIDA, NIT, and NJIL.

In NJIGEDLA-CH, the CH must be taken as the exponent of ten, probably an abbreviation of the Finnish ksan, used for the same purpose. In the other forms this final ch has been lost, as its etymological importance ceased to be felt.

Prof. Schott admits the possibility that the two roots for ten, T-S, and KSAN, were originally identical. He traces ksan as ten in

Finnish,	kahde-ksan, 8,	and yhde-ksan, 9.
Mordvinian,	kav-kso, 8,	and väj-kse, 9.
Tcheremiss.	kändä-chse, 8,	and ende-chse, 9.
Lapponian,	kak-tse, 8,	and ak-tse, 9.

The original form might have been TSAN, interchangeable with KSAN, which Prof. Schott considers as a full root for ten, while Sjögren takes KSAN as an ablative in san from kym, ten.

What is important is the establishment of NYA in the Ural-Altaic languages with the meaning of "two," a meaning which no doubt it had previous to that of "four" (a dual of two, like ashtau in Sanskrit, eight, a dual of four). NYA lost this signification of two afterwards altogether, in the Ural-Altaic branch, but it must still have possessed it at the time when these Ural-Altaic dialects formed their words for eight and nine. Other traces of ni in the sense of two, are the Ostiakian NIT SOT, which means eighty, i. e., 20—100; and also eight hundred, i. e. 8 × 100; nît being, in the latter case, the usual word for eight, a corruption of NJIGEDLA-CH. In Vogulian NJOL-SAT is eighty, i. e. 20—100. In Mongolian eight is NAIMAN, i. e. 2—10; and even the Tungusian six,

NJUGUN is explained as 2 × 3. In Vogulian NJALA-LU is eight, i. e. 10—2.

To return to the Hungarian KILEN-CZ. This is explained by Prof. Schott as a composition of cz, ten, and kilen, an adverb, meaning "without," or "minus." The "one" which ought to have been added has been dropped, as in the Ostiakian, where, in the dialect below Surgut, nine is expressed by ürch jeung, while above Surgut it is·ej erek jong, one without ten.

In Turkish we saw the root T-S used before in o-tuz, thirty. Prof. Schott detects the same root, which has been identified with K-S, in the Turkish SE-KIZ, eight, and DO-KUZ, nine. In both words, however, he supposes that K has been lost at the end of the words of one and two; for, according to his statement, se in sekiz stands for jak, the Mandshu name for two as preserved in jak-on, eight, i. e. 10—2, while do is traced back to tok, and this to okt, one.

Another root for 'ten,' is found in the Lapponian LOKKE, and LOGE; which in Vogulian became LAGA and LAVA; finally LÔU, and in Tcherem. LU. From this we have the Vogulian njala-lu, 8, i. e. 10—2; and anta-lu, 9, i. e. 10—1; one, anta, being the same as the Tcheremissian ende in ende-chse, 10—1 =9. In the Tcheremissian, LU occurs in Kum-lu, 30; in Kok-la, 20; in viz-lu and viz-le, 50. In Turkish the same root is traced in el-li, fifty, and allig; where al would be an assimilated form of at, Vogulian at, five.

A third root for "ten" is one of a very pliant nature if we accept Professor Schott's identifications. The Turkish ON, the Ostiakian ÄN, and their derivatives; the Mongolian AN, in dalan, 70, yer-en, 90; the Mandshu IN, in orin, 20, and the mere I in dech-i, 40, are all traced back to this root. The same root is pointed out in Mongolian jis-un, i. e. 10—1; and Tungusian jag-in, 9, i. e. 10—1. Likewise in the Tungusian word for eight, jak-un, i. e. 10—2.

In Tchuvashian, ten is VONNA, and VAN. The same root is found again in Hungarian hat-van, 60, and het-ven, 70; both varieties of the same word.

The Ostiakian JANG and JONG, and the Samoiedian JU are likewise referred to this radical.

The Tungusic MEN, 10, and MER, in gur-mer, 20; the Vogulian MEN, in näli-men, 40; the Mongolian MAN, in nai-man, 8, *i. e.* 10—2; the Vogulian PEN in ät-pen, 50; the Syrianian MYN in nelja-min, 40; and MYZ in ko-myz, 30; the Turkish MYSH in alt-mysh, 60; the Syrianian MYS, in jâ-mys, 8, i. e. 10—2, and ok-mys, 9, i. e. 10—1; and finally the Tchuvash MILJ in sit milj, 70, are also brought under the same category.

MEN is again supposed to have been changed into MA in Turkish jer-ma, 20; Yakut, sür-mä; Tchuvash, sir-im; and Osmanli yigir-mi.

A new change takes place in the Tungusic dialects. Here we find this root for ten, as JAN and JUAN, as JAR and JU. Thus jur-jar, 20, would stand instead of jur-men.

A fourth and fifth root for ten are added by Prof. Schott; the one being the Mordvinian KÄMEN (gämen, käm and kä); Esthonian KUMME; Finnish KYMMENE; the other the Mongolic ARBAN.

If in the Ural-Altaic branch "ten" is expressed by five different roots, we need not wonder that the Tamulic branch also has fixed upon its own root for ten, which is PAT.

The pronouns of the Ugric and Tamulian languages show but faint traces of relationship. The characteristic letters of the personal pronouns in the Ugric branch are M, T, S, for the three persons: identical with those of the Arian languages. Whether this coincidence between the Ugric and Arian pronouns should be considered as the result of primary connection, or as a mere phonetic accident, depends on the view which we entertain of the origin of language in general. Certain it is that the coincidence between the Lapponic pronouns

Mon, Todn, Sodn,

and the Swedish Min, Din, Sin, can no longer be explained by supposing that the Lapps borrowed these pronouns from their neighbours, the Swedes*; for the same pronominal bases exist in Ugric

* Gyarmathi (p. 17) considers this Swedish origin of the Lapponian pronouns as

dialects, which have never been in contact with Swedish. Besides, supposing for a moment that pronouns could thus be imported, no one would lightly admit that the terminations of the verbs also had been transferred from the same source; and that the Tcheremissians, for instance, had not distinguished the three persons of the verb, lod*am*, lod*at*, lod*as*, I read, thou readest, he reads, until they received the materials for these verbal forms from Teutonic sources. I believe that the similarity of the pronouns in Ugric and Sanskrit has an historical meaning, but that its explanation must be sought in earlier times than the Finnic migration toward the north of Europe. How early some of the Turanian pronouns began to lose their primitive character may be seen in the Scythic Inscriptions at Behistun, so ably decyphered by Westergaard and Norris. In one of the last numbers of the Journal of the Asiatic Society, the latter ingenious and patient scholar gives us the following pronouns as the result of his investigations.

Hu (I), Ni (thou), Yufri (he); Niku (we),—(you), Appi (they). Here the pronoun of the first person shows the same base as the Arian a h a m, ego, Guzerati. h u n. M, as the exponent of the first person, shows itself in the possessive mi, m i n i; thus bearing witness to the existence of the two bases of the pronoun of the first person, which we find in all the Arian and in some Turanian dialects. As in the Arian dialects the guttural base properly belongs to the casus rectus, the labial base to the casus obliquus; we find in Scythic, also, H u for the nominative, and Mi for the possessive.

But although the pronouns in different branches of the Turanian family have diverged so much from their original type as to render a phonetic restitution of the Ugric and Tamulic pronouns extremely hazardous, we may yet point out as a coincidence the absence in both

a fact. He says, "verum equidem est, quod Pronomina personalia Lapponum m o n, t o d n, s o d n, à Suecorum m i n, d i n, s i n, descendisse videntur." Castrén (De Affixis, p. 63) admits the same supposition, not indeed for the first and second person, but for the Finnic pronoun of the third, h ä n. I give his own words: "Quod denique ad tertias personæ pronomen h ä n attinet, tanta est ejus cum prisco septentrionali pronomine h a n n, Svetice h a n, similitudo, ut videatur nobis Sjögren summo jure originem peregrinam ei tribuere." The same grammarian goes still further, and derives the termination of the Syrianian passive s y a from the Russian СЯ, for instance, y s t y s y a, I am sent.

of the relative pronoun. The Tamulic languages have no relative pronouns, and in Turkish the relative pronoun is evidently borrowed from Persian.

There are other parts of grammar, however, which offer more positive evidence, and have preserved a common type with so much tenacity, that, although the people who speak these dialects are separated by the whole continent of Asia, we can still discover that they once resided in close proximity, and received the first impressions of their grammatical system, as it were, in the same school.

As it would be impossible to go here through all the chapters of the Tamulic and Ugric grammar, and as there are many points in each of later growth and secondary importance, I shall only dwell on those features which have been pointed out by Tamulic scholars as *essential* in Tamulic grammar, and shall endeavour to show their equivalents in the different dialects of the Ugric and Tataric speech. I take the characteristic features of Tamulic grammar as collected by Ellis in his Introduction to Campbell's Teloogoo Grammar, and from Weigle's excellent sketch of Canarese grammar.

I. "Roots in Canarese," as Weigle says, "are monosyllabic, bisyllabic, and trisyllabic. The latter can generally be reduced to a more simple form."

"Ugric as well as Tataric roots are originally monosyllabic, but bisyllabic and trisyllabic exist, which generally, but not always, can be reduced to a monosyllabic form." See Boethlingk, Yakute Grammar, § 442.; Castrén, Ostiake Grammar, § 96.; Tsherem. Grammar, § 8. "Ceterum voces polysyllabæ a primitivis bisyllabis plerumque derivantur."

II. "Some Tamulic roots are also used as nouns, or become nouns by slight modifications; or, as Rhenius expresses it, verbal forms may be declined, and nouns be conjugated in Tamil." The same feature in the Ugric languages has been discussed before, page 296.; see also Boehtlingk, Yak. Gr. §§ 235., 339., and note 71.

III. In order to avoid ambiguity, different dialects sanction either the verbal or the nominal character of a root. Thus, it frequently happens that in one dialect a root is verbal only, in another nominal only.

"In Tamil a c c a r e i occurs only as a substantive; for instance,

yenac accareiyillei, it is not a want to me, i. e. I do not want. In Canarese accariy is common only as the root of a verb; accarîyadu, to be desired." (See Ellis, Introduction.) The same habit, with regard to Ugric and Tataric dialects, has been discussed before, page 303., and by Boehtlingk, in his Yakute Grammar.

IV. "Particles in the Tamulic languages show more or less clearly their origin from simple nouns."—"The postpositions of the Ugric languages do not constitute a separate part of speech, for with few exceptions they are real nouns. Adverbs, like postpositions, are derived from nouns by different inflections." See Castrén, Ostiake Grammar, §§ 127. 129., Yakute Grammar, § 402.

V. "Compound nouns are comparatively scarce in the Tamulic branch; they occur in the more ancient dialects as imitations of Sanskrit compounds." (Weigle.) "In the Ural-Altaic languages the scantiness of compound words has led several scholars to deny even the possibility of real composition in this family of languages. This point has been discussed, and particularly with regard to the Finnic languages, by Boehtlingk, p. xxxi. Kellgren, p. 31. The power of forming compound words, though not used extensively, exists, however, both in Tamulic and Ugric. For instance, Syrianian ydzyd-tos'a, longa barba ornatus; ydzyd-koka, longis pedibus præditus; kos-soja, sicca manu. — Canarese, dâvare gannu, lotos-eyed. In Syrianian Castrén speaks of "*mąny*" compound words. § 42. Gr. Syrian.

VI. "Canarese adjectives may either be placed before the nouns which they determine; in this case they have no inflections: or if they are used as substantives, they are joined with the pronoun of the third person, and then declined in a manner which reminds us of the strong declension in German." (Weigle.) "Adjectiva Tsheremissa declinari quidem possunt similiter atque substantiva; quum vero attributa substantivorum sunt, non declinantur. Ex. jazo, magnus; jazovylä, magni; jazo edemvylä, magni homines." See Gr. Tsherem. § 15.; Gr. Syrian. § 73.

VII. The Tamulic languages have no distinct forms to express the comparative and superlative. The same deficiency exists in the lower branches of the Ural-Altaic family, but has been remedied in its more developed members. In Yakut the absence of the degrees of com-

parison is quoted by Boehtlingk as a "logical characteristic of this primitive Turkic idiom."

VIII. Gender in the Tamulic languages is distinguished only by means of pronouns; and that only in the third person. The third person of the verb, being formed by pronominal affixes, has three forms to distinguish the three genders. Adjectives are not subject to any change to denote the incidents of gender, number, or case; nor are the distinctions of gender denoted in *primitive* nouns by any distinct forms of termination. The pronouns therefore vary, not according to the grammatical *gender* of the nouns to which they refer, but according to the natural *sex* of the objects expressed by the noun. The Tamulic languages admit a "sublime gender" and an "inferior gender." All rational beings belong to the former class; while the latter comprises the whole of the irrational creation, whether animate or inanimate. For the singular the sublime gender is subdivided into masculine and feminine.

The Finnic languages have not even these remnants of grammatical gender. The pronoun of the third person is the same, whether applied to male, female, or inanimate subjects; so is the third person of the verb. "Omnes omnino linguæ Finnicæ originis carent genere." The difference, therefore, between the Ugric and Tamulic languages is only this, that the latter have three pronouns of the third person, while the Ugric have but one. In other respects grammatical gender is ignored by both.

IX. The plural in Canarese is expressed by the termination a r, whether the noun implies a male or a female object. In Gond the plural is formed by n k; in Telugu by l u (r u); in Brahvi by k and t. The termination g a l, which is used for nouns expressive of inanimate objects, has been called a neuter termination; but in reality it is only a secondary affix, expressive of abstract totality. Dr. Stevenson considers the Tamil g a *l*, Canarese g a *l*u, and Telugu l u, to be abbreviations of the Sanskrit s a k a l a, which in Tamil becomes s a g a l a, in Marathi s a g a *l*e.

The old Ugric termination of the plural is äs, or, if we consider ä merely as a connecting vowel, s. This exists in the Syrianian j a s (äs). In Lapponian the s becomes h, in Finnish t, which exists in the Ostiakian e t. According to Castrén, the original form of the plural

was t. This is changed in Hungarian and Lapponic into k, in Kamassian into j e, s a ñ, s ä ñ; in Samo. Ostiakian into l a. In other Samoïedic dialects it is elided, or leaves only a final aspiration. This simple termination has frequently been replaced by secondary forms, such as the Tsheremissian v y l ä. These plural terminations in the Tataric, Mongolic, and Tungusic languages are, as Castrén says, "propriæ indolis et recentioris ut videtur originis." In Turkish the original sign of the plural was t or s; this s in Osmanli became k; but l e r is now used as a secondary formation of the plural in Turkish.

While the Tamulic had retained the distinction of sex in the pronoun of the third person, which the Ugric has lost, the Ugric in some of its dialects (Samoïedian, Lapponian, and Ostiakian) has preserved traces of a dual, which has disappeared in all Tamulic dialects. In Ostiakian the termination of the dual is k a n, x a n, g a n; in Yur. h a', g', k'; in Taw. and Kamass. g a i; in Samoïed-Ostiakian g a, k a. In the Irtishian dialects of the Ostiakian, in Lapponian and Kamassian, however, nouns and adjectives have lost the dual, and pronouns and verbs only have retained it. In the Samoïed-Ostiakian, it is the pronouns that have lost the dual. Castrén derives the termination of the dual from a particle k a or k i, which means a l s o; as in w e l i k i, fraterque.

X. In Canarese there is a third termination of the plural a n d i r. This is used only after nouns which express relationship. Weigle supposes that it was originally an honorific particle, though he admits that "this cannot be proved." Gyarmathi writes, "Habent autem tam Hungari quam Lappones præter pluralem hunc alium adhuc numerum pluralem, qui non in omnibus observatur vocibus, sed tantum in nominibus cognationis (L. t y a h; H. m e k). Significat vero is, non personas pluralitatem, sed consortium aut sodalitium cum illa persona junctum. Duplicem hunc pluralem, Hungari possessivis tantum nominibus tribuunt, Lappones vero nominibus cognationis simplicibus." The nature of this Lapponic plural will perhaps serve to explain the original meaning of the Canarese a n d i r.

XI. In the Tamulic as well as the Ugric languages, the declension of the plural is the same as in the singular. The same terminations which in the singular are added to the base, are in the plural added to the base after it has received the nota pluralis. A Turkish noun,

after it has taken ler as the exponent of plurality, is considered as a singular so far as case terminations are concerned (ler, ler|iñ, ler|e, ler|i, ler|den.) The same in Hungarian. After k has been added to the base of the noun, no further distinction is made between the cases of plural and singular. This is a great advantage in Turanian grammar, if compared with the Arian system of declension. The same simplicity and lucidity distinguish the Tamulic declension where, after gal is added, the plural is the same as the singular. The same system has been imitated by the Bengáli and other Sanskritic dialects. The sign of the plural in Bengáli (dig) has been explained by Dr. Stevenson as an abbreviation of the Sanskrit âdika (âdi); a derivation which, though not yet confirmed by historical evidence, is much more probable than one proposed by myself in a former essay. In Asamese the signs of the plural are bilak, hont, and bur. The only irregularities which occur apply to the nominative, where in some dialects the old plural in r or n is maintained. Occasionally, also, the contact of the terminations with the sign of the plural gives rise to phonetic changes.

XII. But, while nothing can be more regular and intelligible than this Turanian process of distinguishing the plural from the singular, plurals occur particularly in the pronouns which seem not to be formed by external addition, but (to adopt a favourite expression of Arian grammarians) to have been produced by some unknown process from the body of the noun. This applies particularly to the pronoun of the first and second person. The change of Hungarian me (I), te (thou), into mi (we), ti (you); of Syrianian, me, te, into mi, ti; of Mordvin. mon, ton, son, into min, tin, sin; of Lapponian mon, ton, son, into mi, ti, si; of Finnish minä, sinä, hän, into me, te, he; of Tsheremissian min, tin, into mä, tä; and of several other languages, which may be seen in the comparative table of pronouns, is certainly not based on agglutinative principles. Whether we have a right to assume that these forms were therefore produced by an internal revolution, an idea of which no clear conception can be formed, remains to be proved. But if such changes as Sanskrit yas, and Greek ὅς, becoming in the plural ye, οἵ, are considered peculiarly Arian, the above-mentioned Turanian forms will serve to show that they are not so. And it should be remembered that similar

forms exist even in the lowest and least developed of the Turanian languages, as, for instance, in the Taï. The Kassia pronouns, nga, I, pha, thou, become ngi, we, and phi, you.

In the Tamulic languages the plural of pronouns exhibits the same exception. The Canarese nân, nîn, tân (I, thou, himself), form their plurals not by an additional ar, but as nâvu, nîvu, tâvu. In old Canarese the plurals are nâm and tâm, while the plural of the second person is formed by means of the usual plural sign r; nîr, you. In several cases it is clear that the Turanian languages used a different base in the plural from that used in the singular. This is intelligible; but about the process which raised nga into ngi, or me into mi, we know as little as about the growth of the Sanskrit yas into ye. Whether we explain the change of ya into ye by an additional i (ai = e), or whether we look upon *e* as an evolution of *a*, in either case we assume facts which we do not know, and never can know, either by means of analogy or induction. But if afterwards we base further conclusions on grounds so hypothetical, if we classify languages according to what we thus assume, to have been their principle of formation, we really are trying to stand on our own shoulders, and lose entirely sight of the necessary limits of our knowledge.*

XIII. It is owing to the influence of Sanskrit grammarians, as Weigle says, that in early times the number of case terminations in the Tamulic languages has been fixed at eight. Most of them are particles attached to the noun and there is no doubt that the whole declension could be reduced to one casus rectus and one casus obliquus. The ancient dialects are richer in these case-particles, which express more delicate shades of meaning, so that even a larger number of cases might here be admitted than is usually found in grammars. It is more practical, however, to consider these particles as separate syllables. The same opinion is expressed by Dr. Stevenson. He writes,—"Twice seven cases might easily be made out in the Dekhan dialects."

Exactly the same applies to the Ugric languages. I quote Castrén (Gra. Smyr. § 24.): "Omnes omnino linguas Finnicæ originis

* See some excellent remarks on a similar point in Boehtlingk's Yakute Grammar, p. iii.

varietate casuum abundant. Casibus non solum indicant actionem, quæ notio in lingua Syriæna inest Nominativo, Genitivo, Dativo, Accusativo, Infinitivo, Ablativo II., Instructivo, atque statum, casibus Essivo, Factivo, et Caritivo expressum, sed etiam varias loci relationes quæ in aliis linguis præpositionibus reddi solent, at in Finnicis ipsaque Syriæna casibus Allativo et Illativo, Adessivo et Inessivo, Ablativo I., Elativo, Consecutivo et Prosecutivo."

The distinction which Dr. Stevenson tries to establish between a post-position and the sign of a case, that the one is by itself significant, while the other is not, is true in the abstract, but not always in reality. Many post-positions in Tamulic and Ugric are no longer intelligible as independent words, though they clearly have descended from nominal or pronominal bases.

XIV. There are, however, some terminations in Tamulic as well as in Ugric dialects, which, as they express the most general grammatical categories, have become fixed and technical. These, in either branch, have a claim to a higher antiquity than other terminations or affixes whose origin is more palpable. With regard to these primitive terminations, attempts have been made to identify the corresponding forms in Ugric, Tataric, and Tamulic languages. Dr. Stevenson compares—

(1.) The Tamil Accusative in ai, (Malay e) with the Turkish Dative î.

(2.) The Tamil Dative ku, Canarese ge, Telugu ki, ku, ko, Malayalim ka, with the Dhimal (Bhotiya) kho, the Tibetan gya, the Tataric ga.

(3.) The Genitives (or Adjectives) in n, such as Canarese ana, ina, Tamil in, Telugu ni, Gond na, with the Turkish in, Lapponian en, Finnish n, Mordvinian en. In Tchuvashian we have from man, I, manyng, meus, man-yng-yng, mei; again, man-yng-ki, meus, ὁ ἐμός; man yng ki nyng, mei.

XV. The Ugric languages have two classes of post-positions, simple and compound. In Finnish, for instance, the simple Partitivus is formed by ta, the Illativus by s. Both together form the Prosecutivus tse; as karhu-tsé, passing along the bear. The same in Canarese, we meet with compound cases, such as maneyellinda, Locative and Instrumental, "from within the house."

XVI. With regard to the personal pronouns, the admission of their apparent difference in Tamulic and Ugric has already been made. Instead of the characteristic letters m, t, s, we find n, n, t. The older form of the Canarese pronoun of the first person, yan, instead of nan (Malayalim, gnan, Uraon en), might indeed be reconciled with the subjective base of the first person in some of the Ugric dialects; and the initial n of the second be derived from a t, as in Syrianian, Ugro-Ostiakian and Samoïedic dialects the original t of the second person has been supplanted by an n.* But as all intermediate links are lost (except Uraon, asu, you), such comparisons would only show the phonetic possibility, not the historical reality of the common origin of the pronouns in Ugric and Tamulic.

XVII. In the Ugric and Tamulic languages the pronouns form their plural by a modification of the base, not as in substantives, by the addition of a suffix expressive of plurality.

Syranian :

Me, I, and Te, thou, Sya, he, become in the plural
Mi, we, and Ti, you, Nya, they,

while the common termination of the plural is jas.

In old Canarese,

Nân, I, Nîn, Thou, Tân, ipse, become
Nâm†, We, (Nîm, You), Tâm, ipsi.

XVIII. Besides the usual personal pronouns, most Turanian languages have produced a large number of polite or conversational pronouns, such as "Servant," "Elder Brother," "Sister," "Blockhead," &c. Their number becomes smaller with the progress of civilisation and literary culture. Hence but few traces of them remain in the Tamulic, and hardly any in the Ugric branch.

XIX. The coincidences between the numerals in the Tamulic and the other branches of the Turanian family have been discussed before. Besides the agreement in several radicals, it was shown there that the Tamulic shared in the thoroughly Turanian feature that "seven,"

* Cf. Castrén, De affixis, p. 71; also p. 66.

† The modern plurals are, nâvu, nîvu, tâvu, showing the same transition of m into v which we find in the termination of the future, which is m in old, v in modern Canarese.

is the last common numeral, the words for "eight" and "nine" being formed by means of substraction from ten (10-2, 10-1).

XX. With regard to the verb, we have first to point out in Tamulic the double system of personal terminations, one for the present, the other for the past. The origin of these two classes of terminations has been discussed in the first part of this letter, and we need only add here, that in Tamulic also the shorter terminations belong to the past, the fuller to the present.

XXI. The radical termination of the present in Tamulic, which is p in old Canarese and Tulu, and utt in modern Canarese, kir in Tamil, kindr in old Tamil, must most likely be considered as a participial suffix, like the termination er of the present in Turkish. The coincidence between the Canarese utt, and the termination of the present participle uttâ, is sufficient to allow this hypothesis. The termination of the preterite is actually the same in Turkish and Canarese, d, for which in old Canarese we find i, the terminations of the past participle in Canarese being likewise i and du.

XXII. The infinitive in Canarese was originally al or alu, its modern form ad or adu. The latter termination has been recognised by Weigle as the pronoun of the third person, adu. In Syrianian the participle is formed by ysj, ys being the pronoun of the third person preserved in the possessive suffix ys, as purt-ys, his knife. Another form of the infinitive is vana or ana, and this reminds us of the Syrianian infinitive in yny.

XXIII. Canarese has no passive form, but expresses this form of thought periphrastically. For instance, "he eats a beating," instead of "he is beaten;" "he falls a choosing," instead of "he is chosen." Similar contrivances are known from Chinese, Tibetan, and other languages which have not yet left the first stage of materialism in their grammatical growth, and from others, like Bengali, which have relapsed into that state after having passed through the highest dev lopment of grammatical forms. In Chinese * they use kian, to see; for instance, paò, to protect; kian paò, to be protected.

Another passive auxiliary in Chinese is peì, to receive; for instance, k'ian-ts'e, to punish; peì t'ao-ti'ng k'ian-ts'e, to be punished by the Emperor, i. e. to receive Emperor-punishment.

* Endlicher, Chinese Grammar, § 230.

A third root is k'i, to eat. For instance, tà, to beat; k'i tà, to be beaten.

In Kachâri, a Bhotîya dialect, the passive voice is usually formed by means of an auxiliary verb, signifying to be, to eat, to exist, added to the root of the primary verb. Thus, from bu, strike, and jâ, eat, we have—

Present tense, A'ng bu já dang, I am struck.
Imperfect, A'ng bu jábái, I was struck.
Perfect, A'ng bu já dangman, I have been struck, or I have eaten a beating.

In Bengali I remember to have met with similar expressions, khâi, to eat, being used as the auxiliary of the passive. But though I cannot refer to a Bengali authority, a reference to the spoken dialects of Germany would suffice to prove that languages, after producing the most abundant grammatical organisation, fall back again upon these simple and childish expressions. As in Chinese, we may say in German, Schläge besehn, to see blows, Prügel kosten, to taste a beating, in the sense of to be beaten.

In Syrianian no passive exists, except that, on the authority of Castrén, we must admit a passive borrowed from Russian. I subjoin the ipsissima verba: "Passivi finis est —sja, l.-cja (Russ. СЯ), qui adjungitur secundæ personæ imperativi. Ut forma passiva e lingua Russica orta est, ita sæpe vi verbi reflexivi utitur, quæ vis participio semper inest. Quare passivum etiam per verbum auxiliare redditur."

This would show Syrianian at a great disadvantage if compared with Tamulic dialects. Both were deprived of a passive, both were brought in contact with languages, Sanskrit and Russian, possessing a passive form. But while the Tamulic languages supplied their deficiency by an ingenious application of their own resources, the Syranian stooped to borrow a grammatical form from its more powerful neighbour — a grammatical depravity almost without a parallel in the whole history of human speech. Other Ugric languages possess a passive. For in Mordvinian, although the participle is used in an active and passive sense, the terminations van, vat, vi, have always a passive power.

XXIV. The coincidence between the Tamulic and Tataric lan-

guages with regard to a negative conjugation has attracted the attention of several writers.

As to the Finnic dialects, which we have chosen as the most appropriate for the purpose of comparison with the Tamulic, they share in the same grammatical feature: "Conjugatio negativa omnibus Finnicis linguis propria." (Castrén, Grammat. Syriæna, § 66.)

The negative conjugation in Bengali and Mahratti is perhaps an imitation of Tamulic, but formed in a different manner.

XXV. A causal form is produced in Canarese by appending isu to verbal bases. In old Canarese this isu is represented by ichu, in Tamil by ka. The same derivative is employed to form denominative verbs, and is of frequent occurrence at the end of foreign words thus verbalised in Canarese. It then corresponds to the termination ize in English, iren in German.

In the Ugric and Turkic languages causal and denominative forms are so frequent that they are mentioned as a characteristic feature of this class of dialects. The suffixes, however, by which this modification is expressed vary even in Ugric and Turkic. Causatives in Finnish are formed by tan, in Lapponian by tam, in Syrianian by ta. The Turkic dialects show a final r in tar and dar. Neither do the terminations of verbs derived from nouns offer any coincidences, and it is only the frequency of both these verbal forms which constitutes a congruence between Tamulic and Ugric dialects. Literal coincidences between the verbal derivatives used by the Turanians North and South of the Himâlaya, might indeed be pointed out, but they would be of little weight unless the genesis of both could be made out at the same time, thus establishing, not an accidental similarity of sound, but a real identity of origin. Inchoative verbs, which are a class of denominative verbs, are formed in the Turkic branch by a final guttural. This might provoke a comparison with the Tamil ka. But in the Turkic branch * this guttural can be traced back to an original palatal vowel, while in Canarese no light has yet been thrown on the analysis of this termination. The same remark applies to the Hungarian derivative it, by which denominative verbs are formed.

XXVI. The auxiliary verb "to be," in the Tamulic languages, has

* Cf. Boehtlingk, Yakut Grammar, § 493.

likewise attracted attention by its great similiarity with Turkish. There are two bases for this verb in Canarese, ir and u*ll*. In Turkish, one of the radicals of the auxiliary verb is ol, which is shared in common by Turkic and Finnic dialects. It is the Syrianian völi, I was; the Tcheremissian olam, I am. Its radical is originally a pronominal base, and in the same manner the Ostiakian tâjem, I am, is derived from the pronominal root tâ, that.

XXVII. Before we leave this comparison of the leading grammatical features of the Tamulic and Ugric languages, it will be necessary to exhibit at least a few traits of their syntactical similarity. The arrangement of words and sentences might perhaps appear so entirely a matter of individual choice and taste, that we could hardly expect coincidences between nations who, so far as history and tradition can reach back, have always been distinct in their language and nationality. Yet there are no doubt laws, powerful as any in the realm of nature, which make it impossible for certain languages to place their words in the same succession as those of other dialects. No Semitic mind can realize the idea of "ox-tail;" no Arian mind can break itself into the conception of "tail-ox." The following will show how far this influence extends, and how important an argument it is in favour of or against the long-continued community of nations.

The syntactical characteristics of the Tamulic family are taken from Rhenius*; those of the Tataric languages from Schott.†

Tamulic.	*Tataric.*
1. As to the position of the parts of a sentence, the subject always precedes the finite verb, and the latter always concludes the sentence. All other words which depend upon these principal parts precede them respectively; so that the most important of the dependent words is placed nearest to its prin-	1. Every word which determines, and so far as it determines, another word, takes precedence of the latter without exception. The object precedes the verb, because the verb is determined by its object, inasmuch as it individualises the action of the verb.

* Tamil Grammar, p. 117.

† Essay on the Tataric Languages, p. 3.

Tamulic.	*Tataric.*
cipal, and the least important farthest from it.	
2. The adjective always precedes the substantive; as, "good-father."	2. The adjective precedes the substantive.
3. The noun precedes its governing participle or preposition; as if "father-loving," "father-from."	3. The object precedes the verb; what depends on a preposition precedes the preposition (i. e. post-position). The post-position is originally a substantive standing to the noun in the relation of a genitive.
4. The adverb precedes the verb; as, "I shall much love."	4. The adverb precedes the verb.
5. The infinitive precedes the governing verb; as, "to eat go."	5. This would be included under No. 3.
6. The negative branch of a sentence precedes the affirmative.	6. A relative sentence comes before the relative upon which it depends.
7. The number precedes that which is numbered.	7. See No. 2., and add the possessive pronominal adjective preceding the noun.
8. The genitive precedes the governing noun; such as, "king's palace."	8. The genitive precedes that which governs it.

From these general remarks it is evident that the order of the parts of speech in Tamil is opposite to that in English, so that the European student has to effect an entire change in the arrangement of his ideas.

After enumerating the organic and fundamental coincidences which affect the formative principles of these two extreme members of the Turanian family, we need not dwell much longer on smaller traits of similarity. Yet, as in a picture a single line may often help to bring out a likeness which did not strike the eye before, one feature may at

least be mentioned, which, though in itself of little significance, is yet of interest to those who are fond of watching the wonderful instinct of language in its various manifestations.

The Canarese * possess, for the expression of collective ideas, a large number of what are called "pair-words," or "double words." They resemble the English "topsy-turvy," "chit-chat," &c. In most of them the principle of alliteration has been observed, and many obsolete words have been preserved in these compounds only. It is curious that, as in German many expressions of this kind have been kept in legal documents, the Canarese law, anterior to the Mohammedan conquest, teems with the same class of compounds. In some cases the Canarese simply repeats the same word, changing the first syllable into gî, in order to give it a collective or more comprehensive meaning. A Brahman says that he has to perform snâna gîna, which means bathing (snâna) and similar ceremonies connected with it. Nîru is water; nîru gîru, water and similar things. Âta is play; âta gîta, play and other amusements. Mâtu is speech; mâtu gîtu, speeches and the rest. Ârasu, king; ârasu gîrasu, the king and other magistrates. Not only Sanskrit words, but even foreign terms taken from English, have to submit to this process, and a Canarese cook, who has to prepare the dessert, speaks of it as "cake gîke.

Gyarmathi describes the same peculiarity in the language of the Hungarians and Laplanders. Both, he says, delight in forming such expressions as

Lapponian —	Pekkest pekkai.	Hungarian —	Diribrol darabra, de frusto in frustum.
„	Jepest japai.	„	Eszendöröl eszendöre, de anno in annum.
„	Katest katei	„	Kezröl kezre, de manu in manum.
„	Orron orroje.		Örökkön örökke, in æternum.
„	Lakkas laka.	„	Idebb idebb, non procul.

* Weigle, On Canarese Language and Literature, p. 276.

Lapponian — Pako lako. Hungarian — Pelda beszed, adagium.

In Malay, again, the same feature is most prominent. It exists there, as in Canarese and the Ugric languages, not only in isolated cases, or, as in German, in obsolete words and expressions, but as a grammatical principle applied in various manners, — all showing that plastic power of language, which is able to express the intellectual and merely formal by the material, and which in the Arian languages also has left the traces of its former existence in such forms as the Intensive, Desiderative, and similar grammatical derivations.

In Malay* a word is sometimes simply repeated, as mata-mata, a scout.

When, however, an inseparable prefix is annexed to a radical, this prefix is usually omitted in the second member of the reduplication, as bârlari-lari, to run on; barturut-turut, consecutively.

When the word is a verb having a reciprocal sense, the particle is annexed to the second member of the reduplicated word, and not to the first, as bunoh-mâmbunoh, to slaughter frequently and mutually.

Sometimes, the reduplicated word is a primitive of which the etymology cannot be traced, as antar-antar, a rammer; rama-rama, a butterfly.

More frequently, the etymology can be traced, although the derivation is often whimsical. From api, fire; api-api, a firefly. From anak, young; anak-anakan, a puppet. From kera, to think; kera-kera, to conjecture.

Adverbs are frequently formed by the reduplication of other words, as from kunung, sudden; kunung-kunung, suddenly. From churi, to steal; churi-churi, stealthily. With this compare Italian poco poco.

Often the reduplication of an adjective makes only an intensitive, as bâsar-bâsar, very great; manis-manis, very sweet.

The mere love of alliteration has contributed to multiply these reduplicatives. Thus gilang-gâmilang, effulgent. So laki,

* Crawfurd, Malay Grammar, p. 57.

a man, is most generally written and pronounced laki-laki, and this by abbreviation becomes lâlaki, man. Similar abbreviated reduplicated words are, lâlaba, a spider, instead of laba-laba; pâpuwah, frizzly, instead of puwah-puwah. This is one of the many cases where in a Turanian language we can watch the process of which in Arian dialects we see but the result. What better explanation can be given of intensive or frequentative verbs, such as yâyâ*k*, to implore, from yâ*k*, to ask, in Sanskrit, than lâlaki, man, instead of laki-laki?

What, then, it may be asked, is the difference between such forms as pointed out in Nomadic and Political languages? It is this, that Nomadic languages retain the consciousness of this process, and therefore can apply it to any word, though it has never been applied to it before. They know that lâlaki is laki-laki; they still use both; while, to a Hindu, yâyâ*k* was as little a repetition of yâ*k*, as παιπάλλω and δαιδάλλω were to a Greek, gurgulio and gingrio to a Roman.*

CONCLUSION.

THE POSSIBILITY OF A COMMON ORIGIN OF LANGUAGE.

HERE I must close for the present this communication on the Tamulic languages, and their claims to be considered a branch of that vast family of speech which should be called *Nomadic* or *Turanian*, in contradistinction to the two political concentrations of human speech, the *Arian* and *Semitic*. I doubt not that the results at which I have arrived, and the method by which I have been guided, will be questioned on ethnological as well as philological grounds. To classify languages as such, regardless of the physiological characteristics of the races by whom they are spoken, will appear presumptuous in the eyes of the Ethnologist, while to me it seems to hold out the only hope of settling eventually the conflicting claims of Ethnology and Phonology. What we are accustomed to call "race,"† and what, as

* See Bopp's Comparative Grammar, § 753.

† If "race" is derived, not from "radix" as was hitherto supposed, but from the Old High-German reiza, line, lineage, it might be retained as a technical term.

Humboldt has shown, should more properly be called "variety," may date from a period in the history of the world anterior to any division of language. Or, on the other hand, its first effects may have been felt long after the confusion of speech had led to the dispersion of mankind. In either case the classification of language could not be expected to coincide with the classification of the varieties of man. Only on the supposition that the first divergence of race took place contemporaneously with the first divulsion of language, could a coincidence between ethnological and phonological classes be reasonably anticipated, though even then the mysterious intervals of so many centuries between this first parting and the later meeting again of the world's inhabitants through war, conquests, and migrations, would be sufficient to account for any disturbance that may be now observed in the parallel progress, ramification, and intertwining of race and speech.

Physiological Ethnology has accounted for the varieties of the human race, and removed the barriers which formerly prevented us from viewing all mankind as the members of one family, the offspring of one parent. The problem of the varieties of language is more difficult and has still to be solved, as we must include in our survey the nations of America and Africa. But over the languages of the primitive Asiatic Continent of Asia and Europe a new light begins to dawn, which, in spite of perplexing appearances, reveals more and more clearly the possibility of their common origin.

In order to perceive this, and to command this wide view, we must put aside the microscope through which we examine the organism and the ramifications of so small and modern a cluster of dialects as the Arian and Semitic. Different subjects require different methods, and because the method of Bopp and Grimm has been found applicable to an analysis of Arian speech, it does not follow that the same would lead to satisfactory results in higher and more comprehensive branches of linguistic study. We must open our eyes, and ask ourselves what, according to the nature of the case, we can expect to scan and to comprehend, even from that distant point of view, which we necessarily occupy in looking toward the primordial epochs of the history of language. The millions of people who speak and have spoken for centuries from Ceylon to Iceland the innumerable dialects

of Sanskrit, Persian, Gallic, Teutonic, Sclavonic, Italic, and Greek, shrink here together into one small point, and are represented, as it were, by one patriarchal individual, the first Arian, the ancestor of the Arian race. For on all these languages, from Sanskrit to English, there is one common stamp —a stamp of definite individuality — inexplicable if viewed as a product of nature, and intelligible only as the work of one creative genius. Sanskrit, Persian, Greek, Latin, Sclavonic, Teutonic, and Celtic, are simply continuations of one common spring of language, as much as Spanish and Portuguese, French and Provençal, Italian and Wallachian, are all but Latin under different aspects. The differences between languages, as distant geographically, chronologically, and grammatically, as Sanskrit and English, vanish; and all that remains in this comprehensive view is, that one system of grammar, and that patrimony of common roots, which we call Arian, in opposition to Semitic. No new root has been added, no new grammatical form been produced in any of the Arian provinces or dependencies, of which the elements were not present at the first foundation of this mighty empire of speech.

The Semitic languages also are all varieties of one form of speech. Though we do not know that primitive language from which the Semitic dialects diverged, yet we know that at one time one such language must have existed. In it all the peculiarities which now distinguish the three branches of Semitic were not yet developed, but they must have existed potentially. We cannot account for the coincidences between the language of Mohammed and Moses without the admission that, before the separate existence of the oldest Hebrew and the earliest Arabic, there was a real language to which Hebrew and Arabic stand as French and Italian stand to Latin.

The Semitic, therefore, and the Arian languages must be viewed as two individuals, or as the manifestations and works of two individuals which it is impossible to derive from one another. They differ in all that is formal, following sometimes opposite directions in the first principles of grammatical combination. They differ even in their radical elements, inasmuch as each adopted its own process of determining roots by reduplication of final or initial letters, or by distinct additional elements. They differ again in the meaning of roots, because it was a matter of individual choice what power should

become fixed and technical in radicals, which, according to their very nature, must originally have possessed an indefinite applicability.

But, though in physical Ethnology we cannot derive the Negro from the Malay or the Malay from the Negro type, we may look upon each as a modification of a common and more general type. The same applies to the types of language. We cannot derive Hebrew from Sanskrit, or Sanskrit from Hebrew, but we can well understand how both may have proceeded from one common source. They are both channels supplied from one river, and they carry, though not always on their surface, floating materials of language which challenge comparison, and have already yielded satisfactory results to careful analysers. It is true, if there were any strong arguments against the common origin of these two channels of speech, the coincidences between them, hitherto pointed out, would perhaps not suffice to silence them. But, unshackled as we are by any contrary evidence, and encouraged as we must feel by the success of physical research, there is even now sufficient evidence with regard to a radical community between Arian and Semitic dialects, to enable us to say that their common origin is not only possible, but, as far as linguistic evidence goes, probable; while to derive the Semitic from the Arian, or the Arian from the Semitic type, may henceforth be declared a grammatical impossibility.

Before we allow our eyes to swerve to still more distant regions, we must confront those uncounted dialects of Asia and Europe, whose grammar does not run in either an Arian or Semitic channel. They share in none of the features which distinguish the Arian and the Semitic types, and the first point which we can establish with regard to them is, that at no time, after the first separation of the Arian and Semitic types, can they have formed part of these two historical developments of language. Nothing of what is traditional, petrified, or individual in either Semitic or Arian grammar, can be discovered in any of the other dialects of the Asiatic continent. General features common to Arian, Semitic, and Turanian languages, can only be ascribed to the very earliest period of Asiatic speech.

Thus the Turanian dialects share one thing in common, — they all represent a state of language before its individualisation by the Arian and Semitic types. But these Turanian languages cannot be

considered as standing to each other in the same relation as Hebrew and Arabic, Sanskrit and Greek. In smaller spheres, similar families, like the Arian or Semitic, can be established within the Turanian kingdom. The Tamulic dialects, for instance, are held together by the same close ties of relationship as Greek and Latin, Hebrew and Arabic. They necessitate the admission of a common parent, of a long continued grammatical concentration preceding their gradual dispersion. The same applies to the different branches, which have been called Taïc, Bhotîya, Malaic, Mongolic, Tungusic, Tataric, and Finnic. The languages belonging to each of these branches, point to so many parent-languages, whence they proceeded, and which they represent under different aspects. But these branches themselves must be viewed as separate in their beginnings, neither of them being subordinate to any other, neither of them parent or offspring, but all springing side by side from the same soil, though with different powers of growth, and under circumstances more or less favourable to their grammatical organisation.

Nor can these Turanian stems be considered as standing to one another in the same relation as Semitic to Arian. The separation of these two dialects and their independent growth is the result of an individual act, unaccountable in its nature and origin, like everything individual, while the separation and divergence of the Turanian languages can be explained as the result of a gradual, natural, and simple process, which, out of many things that were possible in the mechanical combinations of roots, fixed a certain number of real forms which, under geographical and political influences, became consolidated into national idioms. As in the formation of political societies, we do not require the admission of any powerful individual mind to account for the presence of governed and governing classes, or of laws against theft and murder, but can explain these as the necessary result of social agglutination, we see nothing in the organisation of the Turanian languages that betrays the influence of some individual poetical genius, as the framer of peculiar laws, or the author of certain grammatical principles. In the Semitic and Arian languages, on the contrary, we find institutions, laws, and agreements, which, like the laws of inheritance and succession at Rome or in India, show the stamp of an individual will impressed on the previous traditions

of scattered tribes. It is possible that the Semitic and Arian languages also passed through a stage of mechanical crystallisation, or uncontrolled conglomeration of grammatical elements; but they left it, and entered into a new phase of growth and decay, and that through the agency of one creative genius grasping the floating elements of speech, and preventing by his fiat their further atomical concretion. It is after this had taken place, that the real life of Arian and Semitic language begins, and all Arian and Semitic dialects which we know are the descendants of these two languages, already individualised to the highest degree.

In the Turanian group this individual element is wanting. Hence the different branches, the Tungusic, Mongolic, Turkic, and Finnic in the North, the Taïc, Malaïc, Bhotîya, and Tamulic in the South, are deficient in that family likeness which is peculiar to the offspring of the same individual. They are radii diverging from a common centre, not children of a common parent. This explains their similarity as well as their differences. They share much in common, and show that before their divergency a certain nucleus of language was formed, in which some parts of language, the first to crystallise and the most difficult to be analysed, had become fixed and stationary. Numerals, pronouns, and some of the simplest applied verbal roots belong to this class of words. But even these parts of speech had not yet grown into a system, before the Turanian camp broke up, and hence were not retained as a whole. We may even distinguish two such nuclei of Turanian speech, a Northern and a Southern; and we may trace both back to a still higher point where their repective peculiarities are merged again into one common current. Here, where the differences between the Turanian languages cease, the first stamina of the Arian and Semitic languages also would be found to converge toward the same centre of life. Radicals, applied to certain definite but material meanings in common by all Turanian dialects, belong to this primitive era, and some of them can even now be proved the common property of the Turanian, the Semitic, and Arian branches.

And here the last question presents itself, which Comparative Phonology has to answer. Does this common ground, where the differences of Arian, Semitic, and Turanian dialects are neutralised, correspond with that stage in the growth of language, where the

vital powers of the Chinese were arrested, or is there still an interval, not bridged over by any traditions of language, between this one patriarchal utterance, and the common inheritance of the "three sons of Feridun?" Some few roots that could claim this primeval origin have been pointed out. Their number will never be very great; and their sound and meaning will always have, as Schleiermacher remarked, "quelque chose de vague." But could this be otherwise? Suppose we actually found a number of definite roots, with secondary and tertiary letters, and with complicated significations, in this common treasury of all the languages of Asia. Should we be able to explain such a fact? Would it not invalidate all arguments, and entirely destroy all conclusions to which a careful study of the broken traditions of mankind has led us? Such roots cannot, have not, and will not be found. But if the view here proposed on the origin and growth of language — a view according with all the evidence which the documents of the various dialects of Asia and Europe supply — be accepted, these vague, effaced, and fragmentary roots rise into importance, because confirming, though not proving, our anticipations, like the segments of a circle whose centre we have guessed.

As to the formal elements, or the grammatical growth of language, no difficulty exists in considering the grammatical system of Sanskrit, the most perfect of the Arian dialects, as the natural development of Chinese — an admission made even by those who are most opposed to the generalisations in the science of languages.

These two points, therefore, Comparative Philology has gained: —

I. Nothing necessitates the admission of different independent beginnings for the material elements of the Turanian, Semitic, and Arian branches of speech, —nay, it is possible even now to point out radicals which, under various changes and disguises, have been current in these three branches ever since their first separation.

II. Nothing necessitates the admission of different beginnings for the formal elements of the Turanian, Semitic, and Arian branches of speech — and though it is impossible to derive the Arian system of grammar from the Semitic, or the Semitic from the

Turanian, we can perfectly understand how, either through individual influences, or by the wear and tear of grammar in its own continuous working, the different systems of grammar of Asia and Europe may have been produced.

If we translate these grammatical conclusions into historical language, we arrive at the following facts: —

The first migration from the common centre of mankind proceeded eastward, where the Asiatic language was arrested at the first stage of its growth, and where the Chinese, as a broken link, presents to the present day a reflection of the earliest consolidation of human speech.

The second dispersion was that of the Turanian tribes. Language had slowly advanced, and formed certain deposits of numerical, pronominal, and verbal roots, before the Turanians separated and spread with their dialects to all the corners of the earth. Grammatical growth had commenced, and an abundance of forms had been thrown out from which all took what seemed useful and necessary to them according to their different tastes and characters. Certain grammatical and syntactical principles also had been deeply impressed upon the mind of the Turanian colonists before they started, and these impart to their languages a similarity, even where the material elements of the single dialects have since been changed and replaced.

We must admit two directions for the migrations of the Turanians, as indicated by their languages — a northern and a southern.

The Northern Division comprehends the Tungusic, Mongolic, Tataric, and Finnic branches.

The Southern Division comprehends the Taïc, Malaïc, Bhotîya (Gangetic and Lohitic), and Tamulic branches.

These two divisions had not arrived at any social or political consolidation before they were broken up respectively into different colonies. They probably had no laws, no popular poetry or sacred songs which might have served as a common standard. They broke up carrying away each a portion of their common language — and hence their similarity; but they possessed as yet nothing traditional, nothing like a common inheritance in language or thought, — and hence their differences.

In following the indications of the gradual advance which the

ascending scale in the grammatical growth of these different branches holds out to us, we should be led to suppose that the first migration in the south was that of the people speaking Taï dialects, who settled along the rivers Meikong, Meinam, Irawaddi, and Brahmaputra.

In the north the first migration was that of the Tungusic tribes, following the course of the rivers Amur and Lena.

Both are conterminous with China, and their languages have scarcely left the Chinese stage.

The second migration is that of the Malaïc tribes in the south, who followed the same direction as the Taï tribes, but, finding the land occupied, pushed onward to the islands and the sea.

In the north the second migration would be that of the Mongolic races, pressing on the Tungusic races, their predecessors; and then spreading westward along the chain of the Altaï mountains.

Both nations are characterised by a spirit of enterprise, which on the sea made them feared as pirates, in the desert as robbers. Their languages are more adapted for stern and short command, than for persuasive discussion and argument.

The third migration in the south tended toward Bhota or Tibet and the frontiers of India. The Kamboja peninsula and the coast being occupied, these tribes chose the high plateau, north of India, and in later times poured into India through the mountain passes of the Himâlaya. Their language, particularly where it has received literary cultivation, is capable of expressing abstract reasoning, but is liable to lose itself in artificial complications and polysynthetic confusion.

The same applies to the third migration in the north. The Turkish tribes, finding all the intermediate country taken possession of, proceeded westward to the Ural and the frontier of Europe. Their language, particularly in Turkish, arrived at so high a degree of formal perfection as to make it almost inconvenient for the purposes of common conversation.

The last colony in the south was the Tamulic, in the north the Finnic—both at an early period advanced to a high degree of civilisation, of which we find the traces even now in the wise economy of their languages, and in the few remains of their early institutions and literature. Both were crushed by the later con-

quests of Arian nations; so that in the south we have but vague traditions of their former state, and even these perverted by the jealousy of their Brahmanic conquerors; while in the fens of Finland oral tradition has handed down to us not only the names of these ancient heroes, but the very songs which celebrated their deeds.

If we adopt this view of the gradual spreading of the Turanian branches, we have to suppose that each successive migration, finding the nearest ground occupied, pushed forward to more distant quarters. This seems the more natural supposition; for if we inverted the historical order, and looked upon the last migration as the first, we should have to account for the retrograde movement in the grammatical formation of the four southern and northern dialects. Finnic would then represent the earliest state of Turanian grammar, while the Tungusic would correspond to the latest, — a view which might be defended in the later history of Arian languages, but is untenable in Turanian philology. With the former view, the different degrees of grammatical perfection, and the respective geographical distance of each branch from China, would closely correspond with the historical separation and individualisation of each Turanian branch.

Besides these northern and southern radii of Turanian speech, there are still several sporadic clusters of dialects, equally belonging to the Turanian stage of language, but left to themselves, as it were, and lost in impervious mountains and deserts. In their seclusion, and debarred from the severe attrition which every dialect experiences in intercourse with other languages, they have each produced the utmost variety of grammatical forms, and revel in a luxuriance of verbal distinctions which small and secluded tribes alone are able to indulge in.

These are the aboriginal languages spoken in the impenetrable valleys of the Caucasus; the Basque in the Pyrenees, and on the very edge of Europe, and the Samoïedic in the still less accessible Tundras of the north of Siberia.

In these secluded dialects, the peculiarities of individuals may gain an influence which changes the whole surface of grammar and dictionary. Turanian languages, particularly, are so pliant that they lend themselves to endless combinations and complexities, unless a national literature or a frequent intercourse with other tribes act as

safeguards against dialectical schism. Tribes who have no literature and no sort of intellectual occupation, seem occasionally to take a delight in working their language to the utmost limits of grammatical expansion. The American dialects are a well-known instance: and the greater the seclusion of a tribe, the more amazing this rank vegetation of their grammar. We can at present hardly form a correct idea with what feeling a savage nation looks upon its language; whether, it may be, as a plaything, a kind of intellectual amusement, a maze in which the mind likes to lose and to find itself. But the result is the same everywhere. If the work of agglutination has once commenced, and there is nothing like literature or society to keep it within limits, two villages, separated only for a few generations, will become mutually unintelligible. This takes place in America, as well as on the borders of China and India; and in the North of Asia, Messerschmidt relates, that the Ostiakes, though really speaking the same language every where, have produced so many words and forms peculiar to each tribe, that even within the limits of twelve or twenty German miles, conversation between them becomes extremely difficult. It must be remembered also, that the dictionary of these languages is small if compared with a Latin or Greek Thesaurus. The conversation of nomadic tribes moves within a narrow circle, and with the great facility of forming new words at random, and the great inducement that a solitary life holds out to invent for the objects which form the world of a shepherd or huntsman, new appellations, — half poetical, perhaps, or satirical, — we can understand how, after a few generations, the dictionary of a nomadic tribe may have gone, as it were, through more than one edition.

There are still a few languages which for the present must remain unclassed, because the means are wanting for subjecting them to a grammatical analysis. Such are the languages of Korea, of the Koriäks, Kamtadales, and of Japan. Their number is small, and in them also some traces of a common origin with the Turanian languages have, it is probable, survived, and await the discovery of philological research.

Other branches of Turanian dialects may have existed in Asia and Europe during times of which we have no records, and previous to the first immigration of Arian and Semitic races. Wherever these

two races arrive, they find the land occupied by barbarians, represented as giants or evil spirits, and speaking languages unintelligible to the new arrivers. They were exterminated, and their languages silenced for ever. Here the links may have been broken and lost which once united the language of Asia and Europe with the scattered dialects of Africa and America. An extension of the Turanian family to these two continents has been hinted at by several scholars. The Greenland language has been pointed out as showing a transition of Turanian into American dialects, and the researches of physical science have clearly indicated the islands east of Siberia, as the only bridge on which the seeds of Asia could have been carried to the New World. As to African dialects, all is still conjecture, except this, that, besides the Semitic type of some African languages, such as the Galla, spoken north of the equator, there is another grammatical character impressed on other idioms, as, for instance, the Hottentot, which, by its mechanical perfection and artificial complication, invites a comparison with the grammatical system of the descendants of Tur.*

What was the state of the Arian and Semitic dialects during this early period of ethnic migration and struggle we do not know. Their history begins only when they cease to belong to the chaotic mass of Turanian Nomads. They appear at once on the stage of history, fully clad in their own armour, the enemies of the barbarians, the worshippers of brighter gods, and with a language which has left for ever the tumult of a Turanian arena. They are Arians, or Shemites, inasmuch as they are no longer Turanians; and though their antecedent growth must have passed through a Turanian phase, this is overcome when they appear as the heralds of a new era in the history of man. It is only after having conquered in themselves Turanianism, in every sense of the word, that they advance through Asia and Europe as the conquerors of the descendants of Tur. This battle is not yet ended; and the largest share of the earth still belongs to its earlier occupants. The Arian and Semitic languages occupy but four peninsulas of the primeval continent, — India, Arabia, Asia Minor, and Europe; all the rest belongs to the family

* See Boyce's Kaffir Grammar, Introduction, page ix.

of Tur. But the countries reclaimed by Shem and Japhet mark the high road of civilisation, and comprehend the stage on which the drama of ancient and modern history has been acted.

Shem was in advance of Japhet; and his first colonies represent a stage of language not yet decidedly Semitic, not yet freed from all Turanian influences, and, hence, less distant also from the stream of Arian speech. These were the colonists of Africa, who have fallen back into nomadic habits, but whose language is still the language of the people in Marocco, Algiers, Tunis, Tripoli, and Fez, wherever it has not been supplanted by the tongue of the conquering Arabs. A second colony, not yet decidedly Semitic, but, owing to political influences, more settled in its grammatical system, took its abode in Egypt. A third made its idiom the language of Babylonia and Assyria.

These three early colonies exhibit the Semitic in its struggle towards grammatical form and consistency; and the individuality of Shem has not yet in them obscured those traces of a common past which enable us to connect the radical elements of the Semitic with the Turanian, and through it with the Arian family.

After these three colonies, the limits of the Semitic speech were drawn more closely together, and the three later branches, the Arabic, Aramaic, and Hebrew, stand before us as cognate descendants of one parent, who has left to each the sharp and decided features of his own expression.

The Arian family has had but one generation of dialects. There was a time when the ancestors of this race formed one family, in the proper sense of the word. Their language was then the idiom of a hamlet, as Latin was at one time spoken by the few adventurers who built their cottages on the hills of the Tiber. Without some such previous concentration, as it is impossible to account for the perpetuation of the most minute and fanciful forms in the Roman dialects of modern Europe, it would be in vain to account for the coincidences between the Arian dialects of the ancient world. The Arian language, which grew, or became nationalised, into Sanscrit, Persian, Greek, Latin, Teutonic, Slavonic, and Celtic, must have been a language richer perhaps than any of its descendants, but a language with such settled principles, and such intense individuality

in grammar and dictionary, that the national, or, as we may here call it, the individual character of its descendants, though widely different as the meditative Hindu and active Greek, could never obliterate or efface the stamp of their common parent.

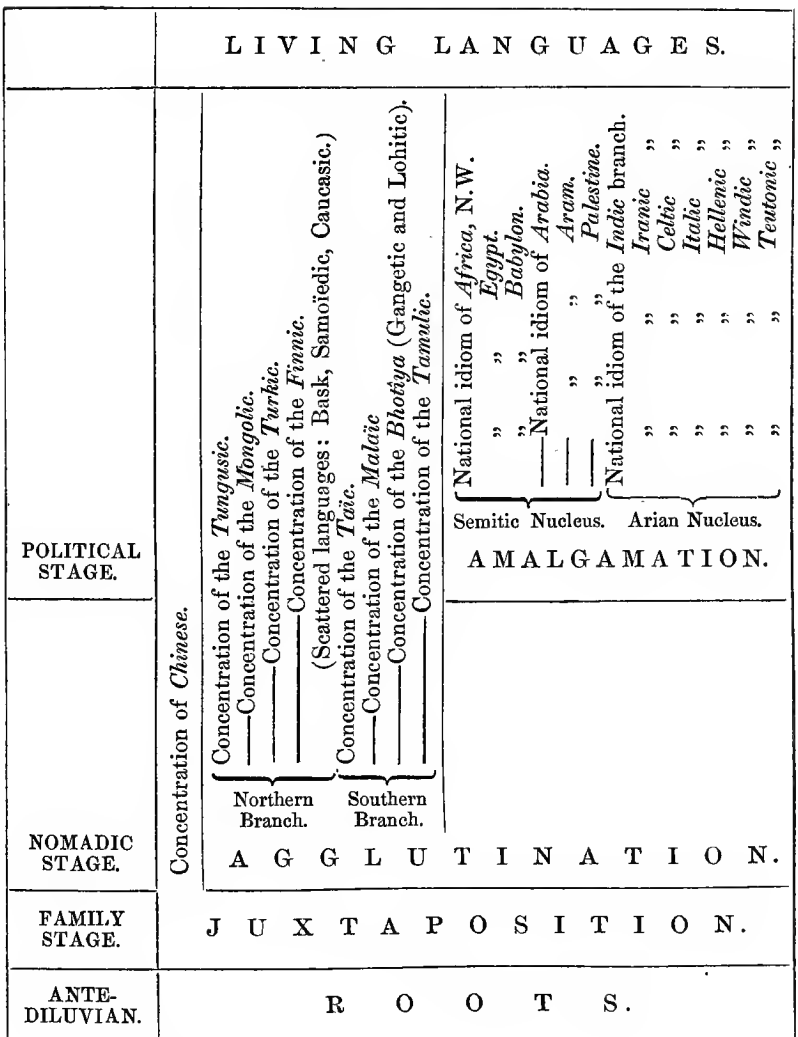
And if now we gaze from our native shores over that vast ocean of human speech, with its waves rolling on from continent to continent, rising under the fresh breezes of the morning of history, and slowly heaving in our own more sultry atmosphere, — with sails gliding over its surface and many an oar ploughing through its surf, and the flags of all nations waving joyously together, —with its rocks and wrecks, its storms and battles, yet reflecting serenely all that is beneath, and above, and around it,—if we gaze, and hearken to the strange sounds rushing past our ears in unbroken strains, it seems no longer a wild tumult, or *ἀνήριθμον γέλασμα*, but we feel as if placed within some ancient cathedral, listening to a chorus of innumerable voices; and the more intensely we listen, the more all discords melt away into higher harmonies, till at last we hear but one majestic trichord, or a mighty unison, as at the end of a sacred symphony.

Such visions will float through the study of the grammarian, and in the midst of toilsome researches his heart will suddenly beat, as he feels the conviction growing upon him that men are brethren in the simplest sense of the word— the children of the same father — whatever their country, their colour, their language, and their faith.

MAX MÜLLER.

Note. — Circumstances over which I had no control made it impossible to carry out a uniform system of transcription in the letter on the Turanian Language and in the Tables appended to it.

The Languages of Asia and Europe arranged according to their Grammatical Principles.



FIRST APPENDIX.

COMPARATIVE TABLE OF SUBJECTIVE AND PREDICATIVE COMPOUNDS.

Explanation of Letters.

Capitals are used to represent Verbal bases.
Small Letters to represent Nominal bases.
Greek Letters to represent Pronouns.
A. a. α. to represent a word in the Nominative, or as Subject.
B. b. β. to represent a word in the Casus obliquus, or as Predicate.

For instance:

a. b.=Nominal base as subject, followed by Nominal base as predicate: Hôtel-Dieu.

a. β.=Nominal base as subject, followed by Pronoun as predicate: Hebr. El-i, God (of) I, i.e. my God. (*Different from* fratelmo, i. e. fratellus meus.)

a. B.=Nominal base as subject, followed by Verbal base as predicate. (Possible only if the verbal predicative base becomes an adjective.)

The sign – is used after nominal bases.
The sign . is used after verbal bases.

CHAM.	SHEM.	TURANIAN.	
Egypt.	*Palestine.*	*China.*	*India extra Gangem*
I. 1. a. b. si-Hes, *son (of) Isis.*	I. 1. a. b. debar-mêlek, *word (of a) king.* malki-zedek, *king (of) justice.* ben o Be'or, *son he (of) Beor.*	I 1. a. b. No.	I. 1. a. b. No. Exc. Tai dialects. Khamti, hang-pa, *tail (of) fish, a fish's tail;* pa=*fish.* Kassia, ka.reng-u.blang, *horn (of) goat.* Siamese, kua-khon, *head (of) man.* Malay, kapala-orang, *head (of) man.* Anam, chua-nya, *master (of) house.*
uskh en nub, *chain (which or where) gold*, i.e. *chain of gold.*	shir (asher lĕ) Shelomoh, *the song (which to) Solomon.* Syr. nausa d simō, *chest (where) silver.* Ethiop. wald a Mâryâm, *son who (to) Mary.*		
suten-tef, *king (who or as) father.*	Ethiop. mazmor za Dâwith, *psalm that (of) David* (za=he, *psalm being a masc.*)		
neter-mut, *goddess (who or as) mother*, cf. *queen-mother.*	anqaz enta samây, *the gate (which) heaven* (enta=she, *gate being a fem.*)		
I. 2. a. β. si-k, *son (of) thee.*	I. 2. a. β. lebush-i, *dress (of) me.*	I. 2. a. β. No.	I. 2. a. β. No.
si-f, *son (of) him.*	lebush-kâ, *dress (of) thee.*		Exc. Khamti, etc., müman, *hand (of) him*, i.e. *his hand.*
set-ten *daughter (of) them.* (Coptic, No.)	lebush-âh, *dress (of) her.* (cf. labsh-âh, *she dresses*).		
I. 3. a. B. neter-naâ, *God-great.*	I. 3. a. B. dâm-nâqi, *blood-innocent.*	I. 3. a. B. No.	I. 3. a. B. No? Exc. Khamti, etc., kun-ni, *man good.* kun-mani, *man bad.* Miri, âmie-âidâ, *man good.* Garo, mande-namja ni, *man bad of* (Genit.).
cf. neter-mut, *goddess-mother.* (a.b.)			
II. 1. A. b. NEVER.	II. 1. A. b. NEVER.	II. 1. A. b. NEVER.	II. 1. A. b. NEVER.
II. 2. A. β. iri. en. a. iri. en. ek. iri. en. ef. *doing where I*, i.e. *doing of me*, i.e. *I did, thou didst, he did.*	II. 2. A. β. qathal.ti, qathal.tâ, qathl.âh, *killing (to) me. thee, her*, i.e. *I killed, thou killedst, she killed.*	II. 2. A. β. No.	II. 2. A. β. No. Exc. Nâga dialects.
II. 3. A. B. NEVER.	II. 3. A. B. NEVER.	I. 3. A. B. NEVER.	II. 3. A. B. NEVER.
III. 1. *a.* b. NEVER.	III. 1. *a.* b. NEVER.	III. 1. *a.* b. NEVER.	III. 1. *a.* b. NEVER.
III. 2. *a.* β. NEVER.	III. 2. *a.* β. NEVER.	III. 2. *a* b. NEVER.	III. 2. *a.* β. NEVER.
III. 3. *a.* B. No. (Exc. Coptic, ei iri. ek iri, ef iri, *I, thou, he makes.* cf. B*a.*)	III. 3. *a.* B. (*a* B*a*). ni.qthol, ti.qthol, nâh, yi.qthl.u, *we killing, you killing (fem.), they killing.*	III. 3. *a.* B. No (ngò tâ, *I strike.*) (ni tâ, *thou strike(st)*).	III. 3. *a.* B. No.

TURANIAN.

Caucasus.

I. 1. a. b.
No.

I. 2. a. β.
No.

I. 3. a. B.
No?
Abchasian and Tsherkessian, aphshits-abzia-khwa, *fish good, plur.=good fishes.*

II. 1. A. b.
NEVER.

II. 2. A. β.
No.

II. 3. A. B.
NEVER.

III. 1. a. b.
NEVER.

III. 2. a. β.
NEVER.

III. 3. a. B.
No. (cf. aBa).

Dekhan.

I 1. a. b.
No.

I. 2. a. β.
No.
? Sontal, apa-t, *his father?*

I. 3. a. B.
No?

II. 1. A. b.
NEVER.

II. 2. A. β.
No.

II. 3. A. B.
NEVER.

III. 1. a. b.
NEVER.

III. 2. a. β.
NEVER.

III. 3. a. B.
No.

Altai.

I. 1. a. b.
No.

I. 2. a. β.
Lapp. atzya-m, atzya-d, atzya-s, *my, thy, his father.*
Hung. atya-m, atya-d. attya, *my, thy, his father.*
Yakute, agha-m, agha-n, agha-ta, *my, thy, his father.*

I. 3. a. B.
No?

II. 1. A. b.
NEVER.

II. 2. A. β.
Hung. Transit, definite, hall.om, hall.od, hall.ja, *hearing (to) me*, i.e. *I heard (it), thou, he heard.*
Ibid. Preterite indef. vart.am, vart.al, vart, *waiting (to) me; I, thou, he waited.*
Yakute. Perfect, sanât.ĕm, sanât.a, sanât.en, *thinking (to) me; I, thou, he thought.*

II. 3. A. B.
NEVER.

III. 1. a. b.
NEVER.

III. 2. a. β.
NEVER.

III. 3. a. B.
No.

JAPHET.

Indo-European.

I. 1. a. b.
No.
Exc. Pehlevi, kup i Fars, *mountain (there) Persia*, i.e. *mountain of P.*
Parsi, qârî-Garôthman, *the splendour (of) Gerothman.*
Parsi, vînasn i kasm, *the sight (where) the eye.*
Persian, puser i dost, *the son (where) the friend, the friend's son.*
Afghan, Sardârân da Candahar, *the Sardars (they) Candahar*, i.e. *of Candahar.*
Cf. Pehlevi-Zend, gâum yim Sugdhósa yanêm, *regionem (quam) Sugdhæ-situm habentem.*

I. 2. a. β.
No.
Exc. Persian, dîn-em *my religion*; dîn-esh, *thy religion*; *but not in Parsi, exc. after prepositions, as* az-ash, *from him.*

I. 3. a. B.
No?
Sansk. pita-maha, *father-grand*, i.e. *grandfather.*

II.
NEVER.

II. 2. A. β.
No.

II. 3. A. B.
NEVER.

III. 1 a. b.
NEVER.

III. 2. a. β.
NEVER.

III. 3 a. B.
No.

Cham.	Shem.	Turanian.	
Egypt.	*Palestine.*	*China.*	*India extra Gangem.*
IV. 1. b. a. No.	IV. 1. b. a. No.	IV. 1. b. a. 1. min-li, *people's power*	IV. 1. b. a. 1. Changlo, kurta-bī, *horse's leg.* Burmese, lu-khaung, *man's head.*
		2. min-ti li, *man-his power.*	2. Genitive Adjectives: Singpho, kaosu-nà rung, *a cow's horn* (*a bovinu cornu*). Garo, ambal ni kethali, *a wooden knife.*
IV. 2. b. *a.* Never.	IV. 2. b. *a.* Never.	IV. 2. b. *a.* Never.	IV. 2. b. *a.* Never.
IV. 3. b. A. Never.	IV. 3. b. A. Never.	IV. 3. b. A. Never.	IV. 3. b. A. Never.
V. 1. B. a. No.	V. 1. B. a. No.	V. 1. B. a. pĕ-mà, *white horse.*	V. 1. B. a. Bhot. kháng-záng, *house-good, a good house.* zang-mi, *good man.*
V. 2. B. *a.* Present: iri. a. *do-I, I do.* iri. ek. *thou does!.* iri. ef. *he does.* (Coptic. No.)	V. 2. B. *a.* No.	V. 2. B. *a.* No.	V. 2. B. *a.* No. Exc. Nâga. Present, thier.áng, thien.o, thie .a, *put-I*, i.e. *I put, thou puttest, he puts.* Preterite, thien t.ak, thien t.o, thieu t.a, *I, thou, he did put.*
V. 3. B. A. Never.	V. 3. B. A. Never.	V. 3. B. A. Never.	V. 3. B. A. Never.
VI. 1. β. a. No.	VI. 1. β. a. No.	VI. 1. β. a. ngo-sin *I-heart*, i.e. *my heart.* 2. ngo-ti sin, *mine heart.*	VI. 1. β. a. No. Exc. Nâga, i-láh, *my kite.* The same in Gyarung and Kiranti. 2. Genitive Adjectives: Kachari, ang-ni náwa, *mei nomen.* Nâga, irang láh, *mine kite.*
VI. 2. β. *a.* Never	VI. 2. β. *a.* Never.	VI. 2. β. *a.* Never.	VI. 2. β. *a.* Never.
VI. 3. β. A. No.	VI. 3. β. A. No.	VI. 3. β. A. No.	VI. 3. β. A. No.

TURANIAN.			JAPHET.
Caucasus.	*Dekhan.*	*Altai.*	*Indo-European.*
IV. 1. b. a. Suanian, mare-shiar, *man's hands.* Abch'asian, aph-wizba-ala, *girl's dog.*	IV. 1. b. a. Tam. vidu-kkatavu, *house-door.* kal-vari, *stone-road.*	IV. 1. b. a. Lapp. pana-kritjem, *tooth-ache.* Hung. fog-fajas, *tooth-ache.* Yakute, kĕs-usug ar, *winters end in, at the end of winter.* tas. kharakh, *stone-eye* (*spectacles*).	IV. 1. b. a. Snsk. râga-purusha, *king's man.*
2. Genitive Adjectives.	2. Genitive-Adjectives.	2. Genitive-Adjectives : Mandshu, irgeni amo, *populi pater.*	2. Genitive-Adjectives : Hind. Kudâ-kâ betâ, *God's son* (*divinus filius*). Kudâki mâ, *God's mother* (*divina mater*). Latin, Dei filius, filius Dei.
IV. 2. b. *α.* Never	IV. 2. b. *a.* Never.	IV. 2. b. *a.* Never.	IV. 2. b. *a.* Never.
IV. 3. b. A. Never.	IV. 3. b. A. Never.	IV. 3. b. A. Never.	IV. 3. b. A. Never.
V. 1. B. a. Suanian, ćilader-dcas, *daily bread.*	V. 1. B. a.	V. 1. B. a. Lappon. denkewes-almats, *fat man.* Genit. denkewes-almats a, *fat man of.* Hung. kövér-ember, *fat man.* Genit. kövér-emberé, *fat man's.* Turk. altyn-zengirim, *my golden chain.* Gen. altyn-zengirimin, *of my golden chain.*	V. 1. B. a. Sanskrt. mahâ-deva, *Great-god.* (cf. mahâmas, *magnify we.*) Gen. mahâ-devasya, *Great-god's.* Greek, ἐλαχε-χίτων. ἐλαχιστί-πτερος. Anglo-Sax. sic-grène, *Ever-green.* Ohg. sin-fluot, *great flood, Deluge.*
V. 2. B. *α.* ᵉBa. Lazian, Present, b chask.a, chask.a, chask.as, b chask.at, chask.at, chask.an, *I dig I*, i.e. *I dig ; dig thou*, i.e. *thou diggest ; he, we, you, they dig.*	V. 2. B. *a.* Telugu, vaguta-nu, vaguta-vu, vaguta-du, vaguta-mu, vaguta-ru, vaguta-ru, *speaking-I*, i.e. *I speak ; thou, he, we, you, they speak.*	V. 2. B. *a.* Hung. Present intrans. hall.ok, hall.asz, hall, *hearing-I*, i.e. *I am hearing ; thou, he hears.* Yakute, saqî.bin, saqî.gin, sanâr, *knowing-I*, i.e. *I know ; thou, he knows.*	V. 2. B. *a.* Snsk. Perfect. Atm. (+â) dad.e, dadi.she, dad.e, dadi.mahe, dadi.dhve, dadi.re. Present, dad.e, dat.se, dat.te, dad.mahe, dad.dhve, dada.te, *taking-I*, i.e. *I take, and* (*continue to*) *take.* Greek, Perf. Pass. δέδο.μαι, δέδο.σαι, δέδο.ται. Pres. Pass. δίδο.μαι, δίδο.σαι, δίδο.ται.
V. 3. B. A. Never.	V. 3. B. A. Never.	V. 3. B. A. Never.	V. 3. B. A. Never.
VI. 1. *β.* a. Suanian. s-ab, w-ab, i-ab, h-ab, sh-ab, r-ab, *my, thy, his, our, your, their father.*	VI. 1. *β.* a. Telugu, na-tandri, *my father.* Uraon, im-has, *my father.*	VI. 1 *β.* a. No. (*βα*β) Syr. tead-mortâ, *thine man of thee.*	VI. 1. *β.* a. Snsk. mat-putra, tvat-putra, tat-putra, *my, thy, his son.*
2. Genitive Adjectives : Lazian, shkimi ili, *my spear.* Suanian, mishgwa mu, *meus pater.*	2. Genitive Adjectives.	2. Genitive Adjectives : Mandshu, mi-ni amo, *mei pater.* miningge, *meus.*	2. Genitive Adjectives : Asmâ-kam pitâ or âsmâkah pitâ, *our father.* πατήϱ σου, σός πατήϱ.
VI. 2. *β.* *α.* Never.	VI. 2. *β.* *α.* Never.	VI. 2. *β.* *α.* Never.	VI. 2. *β.* *α.* Never.
VI. 3. *β.* A. Lazian, ma ma-zun, si ga-zun, himuz a-zun+ asere, *my-ailing*, i.e. *I ailed ; thou, he ailed.*	VI. 3. *β.* A. No.	VI. 3. *β.* A. N	VI. 3. *β.* A. Snsk. *β*A*β*. Preterite : [m]a lip.am, [s]a lip.as, [t]a lip.at, *my writing*, i.e. *I wrote, thou, he wrote.*]

SECOND

COMPARATIVE TABLE OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS, ATTACHED TO

Note. — □, Nominal base.

	Singular.					
	First Person.	*Second Person.*		*Third Person.*	
		M.	F.	M.	F.
1. EGYPTIAN.					
Nominative. a	nuk. anuk.	entek.	enta.	entuf.	entes.
Status subjectivus. b [present]	√a. (*the same as* d)	√ek.	√et.	√ef.	√es.
Casus obliquus. c	n.a(n.u) (*where I*, i.e. *of me*)	n.ek.		n.ef.	n.es.
Status prædicativus. d					
1. cum nom. [possessive]	□a.(u) (*the same as* b)	□ek.	□et.	□ef.(-se.)	□es.
2. cum verb. [preterite]	√en.a. (en.u.) *the same as* c.	√en.ek.	√en.et.	√en.ef.	√en.es.
2. HEBREW.					
Nominative. a	ânoki. ani.	atâh.	at(ati).	hu.	hi.
Status subjectivus. b [present]	ĕ√.	ti√.	ti√i.	yi√.	ti√.
Casus obliquus c	—	—	—	—	—
Status prædicativus.					
1. cum nom. [possessive]	□i.	□kâ.	□ĕk.	□o.	□âh.
2. cum verb. [preterite]	√ti. (Ethiop. ku.)	√tâ.	√t.(kâ.)	√.	√âh.
3. SANSKRIT.					
Nominative. a	aham.	tvam.		svayam. sa, sâ, tad.	
Status subjectivus. b [present]	√mi.	√si.		√ti.	
Casus obliquus. c	{ mama. (mâmakas.)	tava. (tâvakas.)		sve. (svas, svakas.)	
	{ me. (madîyas.)	te. (tvadiyas.)		tasya. (tadîyas.)	
Status prædicativus. d					
1. cum nom. [possessive]	mad □.	tvad □.		sva □, tad □.	
2. cum verbis. [preterite]	-'√m.	-'√s.		-'√t.	
4. GREEK.					
Nominative. a	*ἐγώ.*	*σύ.*		*ἵ.* (*σφί.*) *ὅ, ἥ, τό.*	
Status subjectivus. b [present]	√*μι.*	√*σι.*		√*τι.*	
Casus obliquus. c	*ἐμοῦ.* (*ἐμός.*)	*σοῦ*(*σός.*)		*οὗ.* (*σφός.*)	
Status prædicativus. d cum verbis [preterite]	-'√*ν.*	-'√*ς.*		-'√(*τ.*)	
5. LATIN.					
Nominative. a	ego.	tu.		ipse. hic, hæc, hoc.	
Status subjectivus. b [present]	√o.	√s.		√t.	
Casus obliquus. c	mei. (meus.)	tui. (tuus.)		tui. (suus.) hujus.	
Status prædicativus. d cum verbis [preterite]	√m.	√s.		√t.	
6. GOTHIC.					
Nominative. a	ik.	thu.		silba. sa, sô, thata.	
Status subjectivus. b [present]	√o.	√s.		√th.	
Casus obliquus.	meina. (meins.)	theina. (theins.)		seina. (seins.) this.	
Status prædicativus. cum verbis [preterite] deest.					

APPENDIX.

AND OF PRONOMINAL PREFIXES AND AFFIXES NOUNS AND VERBS.

√, Verbal base.

	PLURAL.			
First Person.	*Second Person.* M. F.	*Third Person.* M. F.	*Sign of Genitive & Adjective.*	*Plural.*
— √en.	emtuten. entuten. √ten.	entesen. sen. √sen.		-n.
(n.en.)	ne.ten.	na.n.	ne-, *the Egyptian pron. demonst. and relat.; Of.*	
□en. √en.en.	□ten. √en.ten.	□sen. √en.sen.		
anakhnu. (nakhnu.) ni√. —	atem. atèn. (atênâh.) ti√u. ti√nâh.	hèm(hèmâh.) hèn(hènâh.) yi√u. ti√nâh.		-n.
—	— —	— —		
□ênu. √ou.	□kem. □ken. √tem(Eth. kemmu)√ten.	□âm. □ân. √û.		
vayam. -√mas.	yûyam. √vas.	svayam-tè, tâs, tâni. √nti.		-s.-i.
asmâkam. (âsmâkas.) nas. (asmadîyas.)	yushmâkam.(yaushmâkas.) vas. (yushmadîyas.)	sve. (svas. svakas.) tèshâm. (tadîyas.)	-s.-kas, -îyas.	
asmad □. -√ma.	yushmad □. -'√ta.	sva □. tad □. -'√n.		
ἡμεις. √μεν.	ὑμεῖς. √τε.	σφεῖς. οἱ, αἱ, τά. √ντι.		
ἀμῶν. (ἡμέτερος.) '√μεν.	ὑμῶν. (ὑμέτερος.) -'√τε.	σφῶν. (σφέτερος.) -'√ν.	-ς.-τερος.	-ς.-ι.
nos. √mus.	vos. √tis.	ipsi. hi, hæ, hæ. √nt.		-s.-i.
nostri. (noster.) √mus.	vestri. (vester.) √tis.	ipsorum. horum. √nt.	-us.-ter.	
veis. √m.	jus. √th.	silbai. thai, thôs, tha. √nd.		-s.-i.
unsara. (unsar.)	izvara. (izvar.)	silbônô. thizè.	-na.-ar.	

	Singular.		
	First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*
7. CHINESE (Kuanhoa).			
Nominative. a	ngo. (tsa.)	ni.	t'a.
Status subjectivus. b	ngo√.	ni√.	t'a√.
Casus obliquus. c.	ngo-ti.	ni-ti.	t'a-ti.
Status prædicativus. d.	ngo□.	ni□.	t'a□.
8. GYAMI.			
Nominative. a	gno.	ni.	tha.
Status subjectivus. b	gno√.	ni√.	tha√.
Casus obliquus. c	gno-ti.	ni-ti.	tha-ti.
Status prædicativus. d	gno□.	ni□.	tha□.
9. TAI (Siamese).			
Nominative. a.	kha.	tua. (müng.)	khon. (man.)
Status subjectivus. b	kha √.	tua√.	khon√.
Casus obliquus. c	khang-kha.	khang-tua.	khang-khon.
Status prædicativus. d	□khang-kha.	□khang-tua.	□khang-khon
10. TAI (Laos).			
Nominative. a	ong (ku)	tva.	tan. (man)
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c			
Status prædicativus. d			
11. TAI (Ahom).			
Nominative. a	kau.	mo.	heu.
Status subjectivus. b.	kau√.	mo√.	heu√.
Casus obliquus. c			
Status prædicativus. d			
12. TAI (Khamti).			
Nominative. a	kau.	maü.	man.
Status subjectivus. b.	kau√.	maü√.	man√.
Casus obliquus. c	kau.	maü.	man.
Status prædicativus. d	□kau. hang-man, *tail* (*of*) *her.* hang-pa, *tail* (*of*) *fish.*	□maü.	□man.
13. TAI (Kassia).			M. F.
Nominative. a	nga	me. (pha.)	u. kâ.
Status subjectivus. b	nga√.	me√.	u√. kâ√.
Casus obliquus. c	jong-nga.	jong-me.	jong-u. jong-kâ.
Status prædicativus. d	□jong-nga. ukapa jong ngi, *father of us.* kakarteng jong umon, *the name of the man.*	□jong-me.	□jong-u. □jong-kâ.
14. CHINESE (Kuwen).			
Nominative. a	ngo.	g'hou.	khi.
Status subjectivus. b	ngo√.	g'hou√.	khi√.
Casus obliquus. c	ngo-tci.	g'hou-tci.	khi-tci.
Status prædicativus. d	ngo□.	g'hou□.	khi□.
15. TRANS-HIMALAYAN (Tibetan spoken).			
Nominative. a	gnya.	khye.	khu.
Status subjectivus. b	gnya√.	khye√.	khu√.
Casus obliquus. c	gna.	khe-yi.	kho-yi.
Status prædicativus. d	gna□.	khe-yi□.	kho-yi□
16. TRANS-HIMALAYAN (Horpa).			
Nominative. a	gna.	ni.	jya.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	gna-á.	ni-i.	jya-a.
Status prædicativus. d			

First Person.	Plural. Second Person.	Third Person.	Sign of Genitive & Adjective.	Plural.
ngo-men. (tsa-men.) ngo-men√. ngo-men-ti. ngo-men □.	ni-men. ni-men√. ni-men-ti. ni-men □.	t'a-men. t'a-men√. t'a-men-ti. t'a-men □.	-ti.	-men. (pei.) (mei.)
gno-me. gno-me√. gno-me-ti. gno-me □.	ni-me. ni-me√. ni-me-ti. ni-me □.	tha-me. tha-me√. tha-me-ti. tha-me □.	-ti.	-me.
rau. rau√. khang-rau. □khang-rau.	su. su√. khang-su. □ khang-su.	khau-arai. khau-arai√. khang-khau-arai. □khang-khau-arai.	khang-.	-arai.
hau.				
rau. rau√.	khau. khau√.	khreu. khreu√.		
hau. hau√. hau. □hau.	mau-su mau-su√. mau-su. □mau-su.	man-khau. man-khau√. man-khau. □man-khau.		-su. -khau.
ngi. ngi√. jong-ngi. □jong-ngi.	phi. phi√. jong-phi. □jong-phi.	ki. ki√. joog-ki. □jong-ki.	jong-.	
ngo-shu. ngo-shu√. ngo-shu-tci. ngo-shu□.	g'hou-shu. g'hou-shu√. g'hou-shu-tci. g'hou-shu □.	khi-shu. khi-shu√. khi-shu-tci. khi-shu□.	-tci.	-shu. (tchai.) (teng.)
gnan-jo. gnan-jo√. gnan-jo-yi. gnan-jo-yi □.	khen-jo. khen-jo√. khen-jo-yi. khen-jo-yi □.	kon-jo. kon-jo√. khon-jo-yi. khon-jo-yi □.	-yi.	-jo. (nam.) (dag.) (chag.)
gna-ni (gna-riggi) gna-a-rigya.	ni-ni (riggi). nii-rigya.	ji-ni (ji-riggi). ja-a-rigya.	Elongation.	-ni. -riggi.

		SINGULAR.	
17. TRANS-HIMALAYAN (Thochu).	*First Person.*	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*
Nominative. a	chi. (ka.)	kwa.	tha-cha.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	ka-kchi.	kwe-kchi.	tha-kchi. (kwana-kchi)
Status prædicativus. d			
18. TRANS-HIMALAYAN (Gyarung).			
Nominative. a	gna.	nan re.	gnapos. (watu.)
Status subjectivus. b		na√. (J. A. S. B., 1853, p. 29.)	
Casus obliquus. c.			
Status prædicativus. d	gna □.	ni □.	wa □.
19. TRANS-HIMALAYAN (Manyak).			
Nominative. a	a.	no.	thi.
Status objectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	a-i.	no-i.	thi-i.
Status prædicativus. d			
20. TRANS-HIMALAYAN (Takpa).			
Nominative. a	gue. (nye.)	i.	pe.
Status subjectivus. b.			
Casus obliquus. c	gne-ku.	i-ku.	pe-ku.
Status prædicativus. d			
BHOTIYA.			
21. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Kenaveri).			
Nominative. a	gna. (gnarung).	keot. (kherung.)	phaï; te; khong.
Status subjectivus. b	gna√ung.	keot√ uk.	phaï√ ung.
Casus obliquus. c	gnaring-i.	keot-ki.	te.
Status prædicativus. d	gnarung □.	kherung □.	phaï □.
22. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Serpa).			
Nominative. a	gna.	khyo.	khwo.
Status subjectivus. b	gna√.	khyo√.	khwo√.
Casus obliquus. c.	gna-ti.	khyo-ti.	khwo-ti.
Status prædicativus. d			
23. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Sunwar).			
Nominative. a	go.	gai.	hari.
Status subjecivus. b	go√.	gai√.	hari√.
Casus obliquus. c.	a-ke.	i-ke.	harea-ke.
Status prædicativus. d	a-ke □.	i-ke □.	harea-ke □.
24. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Gurung).			
Nominative. a	gna.	ken.	thi.
Status subjectivus. b	gna√.	ken√.	thi√.
Casus obliquus. c	gna-la.	ken-la.	thi-la.
Status prædicativus. d	gna-la □.	ken-la □.	thi-la □.
25. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Magar).			
Nominative. a	gna.	nang.	hos.
Status subjectivus. b	gna√.	nang√.	hos√.
Casus obliquus. c	gnou.	nuwo.	hochu.
Status prædicativus. d	gnou □.	nuwo □.	hochu □.
26. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Newar).			
Naminative. a	ji.	chha.	wo.
Status subjectivus. b	ji√.	chha√.	wo√.
	M. & F. N.		
Casus obliquus. c	jimho ji-gu	chhang-gu.	waya-gu.
Status prædicativus. d	jimho □. ji-gu □.	chhang-gu □.	waya-gu □.

PLURAL.				
First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*	*Sign of Genitive & Adjective.*	*Plural.*
chi-ki. (cha-klar.)	kweni-ko (kwaoi-klar).	tha-ko. (tha-klar.)		-ki. -klar.
chi-kuk.	kwani-kuk.	tha-kuk.	-kchi. -uk.	
yo.	nyo.	yapos.		
a-dur.	non-dur.	thi-dur.		-dur.
a-dur-i	non-dur-i.	thi-dur-i.	-i.	
gna-ra.	i-ra.	pe-ra.		-ra.
gna-ra-ku.	i-ra-ku.	pe-ra-ku.	-ku.	
net. (gna-tamshe.)	keozhuk.(kherung-tamshe.)	wateshe. (phaï-tamshe.)		-tamshe.
net√ung.	keozhuk√ung.	wateshe√ung.		
gnaring-i.	khering-i.	te.		
gnaring □.	kherung □.	wateshe □.	-ki.-i.	
ni-rang.	khyo-rang.	khwo-rang.		-rang.
ni-rang√.	khyo-rang√.	khwo-rang√.		
ni-ra-ti.	khye-ra-ti.	khwo-ra-ti.	-ti.	
go-vki.	gai-vki.	hare-vki.		-vki.
go-vki√.	gai-vki√.	hare-vki√.		
go-ain-ke.	gai-ain-ke.	hari-ain-ke.		
go-ain-ke □.	gai-ain-ke □.	hari-ain-ke □.	-ke.	
gni-mo.	ken-mo.	thi-mo.		-mo.
gni-mo√.	ken-mo√.	thi-mo√.		
gni-mo-lo.	keme-mo-lo ?	tha-me-la.		
gni-mo-lo □.	keme-mo-lo □.	tha-me-la □.	-la.	
kan-kurik.	nang-kurik.	hos-kurik.		-kurik.
kan-kurik√.	nang-kurik√.	hos-kurik√.		
kan-kurik-um.	nang-kurik-um.	a-kurik-um.		
kan-kurik-um □.	nang-kurik-um □.	a-kurik-um □.	-u. -um.	
ji-ping.	chha-ping.	wo ping.		-ping.
ji-ping√.	chha-ping√.	wo ping√.		
ji-ping-gu.	chha-ping-gu.	wo-ping-gu.	gu.	
ji-ping-gu □.	chha-ping-gu □.	wo-ping-gu □.		

	Singular.		
	First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*
27. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Murmi).			
Nominative. a	gna.	'ai.	the
Status subjectivus. b	gna√.	'ai√.	the√.
Casus obliquus. c	gna-la.	'ai-la.	the-la.
Status prædicativus. d	gna-la □.	'ai-la □.	the-la □.
28. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Limbu).			
Nominative. a	inga. (eruga. C.)	khene.	khune.
Status subjectivus. b	inga√.	khene√.	khune√.
Casus obliquus. c	inga-in.	khene-in.	khune-in.
Status prædicativus. d	inga-in □. (also as abbreviated prefix, J. A. S. B., 1853, p. 28.)	khene-in □.	khune-in □.
29. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Kiranti).			
Nominative. a	anka.	khana.	moko.
Status subjectivus. b	anka√.	khana√.	moko√.
Casus obliquus. c.	angko.	amko.	moso.
Status prædicativus. d	angko □. (also as abbreviated prefix, J. A. S. B., 1853, pp. 28. 32. am-pa, *my father.*)	amko □.	moso □.
30. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Lepcha).			
Nominative. a	go.	hau.	he.
Status subjectivus. b	go√.	hau√.	he√.
Casus obliquus. c	kaseusa.	hadosa.	heu-sa.
Status prædicativus. d	kaseusa □.	hadosa □.	heu-sa □.
31. SUB-HIMALAYAN (Bhutanese).			
Nominative. a	gna.	chhu.	kho.
Status subjectivus. b	gna√.	chhu√.	khŏ√.
Casus obliquus. c	gne-yi.	chhe-gi.	kheu-gi.
Status prædicativus. d	gne-yi □.	chhe-gi □.	kneu gi □.
32. LOHITIC (Burmese spoken).			
Nominative. a	nga (*superior*).	meng (*equal*); men (*inferior*); theo.	thu; i (is); thi (hic).
Status subjectivus. b	nga√.	*the same.*	
Casus obliquus. c	nga-i (ngaha).	men-i.	thu-i.
Status prædicativus. d	ngai □.	*the same.*	
33. LOHITIC (Dhimal).			
Nominative. a	ka.	na.	wa.
Status subjectivus. b	ka√.		
Casus obliquus. c	ka-ng.	na-ng.	wa-ng.
Status prædicativus. d	ka-ng □.		
34. LOHITIC (Kachari-Bodo).			
Nominative. a	ang.	nang.	bi.
Status subjectivus. b	ang√.		
Casus obliquus. c	ang-ni.	nang-ni.	bi-ni.
Status prædicativus. d	ang-ni □.		
35. LOHITIC (Garo).			
Nominative. a	ang (anga. Rob.)	nang. (naa. R.)	u. (ua. R.)
Status subjectivus. b	ang√.		
Casus obliquus. c	ang-ni.	nang-ni.	u-ni. (ua-ni. R.)
Status prædicativus. d	ang-ni □.		

PLURAL.				
First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*	*Sign of Genitive & Adjective.*	*Plural.*
gna-ni. gna-ni√. in-na. in-na □.	ai-ni. al-ni√. an-na. an-na □.	the-ni. the-ni√. then-na. then-na □.	-la. na.	-ni.
ani-ge. ani-ge√. ani-gen-in. ani-gen-in □.	khen-ih'. khen-ih'√. khen-ih-io. khen-ih-in □.	khun-chi. khun-chi√. khun-chi-in. khun-chi-in □.	-in.	-chi
anka-n. anka-n√. ainko. ainko □.	khana-nin. khana-nin√. amuo. amoo □.	moko-chi. moko-chi√. myaucho moyoso. myaucho □.	-so. -o.	-nin.chi.
ka-yu (kâ) ka-yu√. ka-yu pong-sa. ka-yu pong-sa □.	ha-yu. ha-yu√. ha-yu pong-sa. ha-yu pong-sa □	ho-yu. ho-yu√. ho-yu pong-sa. ho-yu pong-sa □.	-sa.	-yu.
gna-cha. gna-cha√. gna-che-gi. gna-che-gi □.	kha-cha. kha-cha√. kheu che-gi. kheu che-gi □.	khong. khong√. khong-gi. khong-gi □.	-gi.	-cha.
nga-do.	men-do.	thu-do.		-do.
nga-do-i.	men-do-i.	thu-do-i.	-i.	
ky-el.	ny-el.	ub-al.		-al.
ki-ng.	ni-ng.	ub-al-ko.	-ng. -ko.	
jang (jang-phur).	nang-chur.	bi-chur.		-chur.
jang-ni.	nang-chur-ni.	bi-chur-ni.	-ni.	
ning. (chinga. R.)	nanok. (na-si-mong. R.)	wonok. (ua-madang. R.)		-nk. -madang
ning-ni. (ching-ni. R.)	nanok-ni. (na-si-mong-ni. R.)	wonok-ni. (ua-madang-ni. R.)	-ni.	-simong

	Singular.		
	First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*
36. LOHITIC (Changlo).			
Nominative. a	jang.	nan.	dan.
Status subjectivus. b	jang√.		
Casus obliquus. c	jang-ga.	nang-ga.	dan-ga.
Status prædicativus. d	jang-ga □.		
37. LOHITIC (Mikir).			
Nominative. a	ne.	nang.	alang.
Status subjectivus. b	ne√.		
Casus obliquus. c	ne-ne.	nang-ne.	
Status prædicativus. d	ne-□: (oi-ali, *bird's nest;* ne-sal, *my work.*)		
38. LOHITIC (Dophlas).			
Nominative. a	ngo.	no.	ma.
Status subjectivus. b	ngo√.		
Casus obliquus. c	ngo-g.	no-g.	ma-g.
Status prædicativus. d	ngo-g □.		
39. LOHITIC (Abor-Miri). Miri (Robertson).			
			M. F.
Nominative. a	ngo.	no (na).	bu (bü). no.
Status subjectivus. b	ngo√.		
Casus obliquus. c	ngo-ke. (ngog. R.)	no-kke. (no-g. R.)	bu-kke. (bü-g. R.)
Status subjectivus. d	ngo-ke □.		
40. LOHITIC (Sibsagor-Miri). Abor (Robertson).			
Nominative. a	ngo.	no.	bu. (bü. R.)
Status subjectivus. b	ngo√.		
Casus obliquus. c.	ngo-kke.	no-kke.	bü-kke.
Status prædicativus. d	ngo-kke □.		
41. LOHITIC (Singpho).			
Nominative. a	ngai.	nang (ni).	khi.
Status subjectivus. b	ngai√.		
Casus obliquus. c	nge-na.	na-na.	khi-na.
Status prædicativus. d	ng-na □.		
42. LOHITIC (Mithan-Nâga, &c.)			
Nominative. a	ku (tau ; ni ; a)	nang (no).	mih. (taupa ; pau ; me.)
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	kukuhe (tesei ; ni).	nang.	
Status prædicativus. d			
43. LOHITIC (Namsang-Nâga).			
Nominative. a	nga.	nang.	ate.
Status subjectivus. b	√ang.	√o.	√a. (e).
Casus obliquus. c	nga-nang (irang).	nang-nang (marang).	ati-eng (a-rang).
Status prædicativus. d	i □.	ma □.	a □.
44. LOHITIC (Khyeng).			
Nominative. a	kyi.	nang.	ni.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	ki-ko.	nang-ko.	ni-ko.
Status prædicativus. d			

PLURAL.				
First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*	*Sign of Genitive & Adjective.*	*Plural.*
jang-thamche.	nan-thamche.	dan-thamche.		thamche
jang-thamche-ga.	nan-thamche-ga.	dan-thamche-ga.	-ga.	
a-li.	na-li.	ana-li.		-li.
			-ne.	
ngo-lu.	no-lu.	ma-lu.		-lu.
ngo-lu-g.	no-lu-g.	ma-lu-g.	-g.	
ngo-lu.	no-lu.	hü-lu.		-lu.
ngo-lu-ke.(ngo-lu-g.R.)	no-lu-ke. (no-lu-g. R.)	bu-lü-ke. (bü-lu-g. R.)	-ke. -g.	
ngo-sin.	no-lü-sin.	ü-llü. bü-lü.		-lu. -sin.
ngo-lü-kke.	no-lu-kke.	bü-lü-kke.	-ke.	
i.	ni-theng.	khi-ni.		-theng.
			-na.	-ni.
a-kau (a-we).	ni-khala (notolell).	tung-khala (tothete).		-khala. -we.
ni-ma.	ne-ma.	se-ning.		-ma.
ni-ma-nang.	ne-ma-nang	se-ning-nang.	-nang. -rang.	-ning.
kin-ni.	nang-ni.	ni-di (ni-ll).		-ni.
ki-ni-ko,	nang-ni-ko.	ni-di-ko.	-ko.	-di.

	Singular.		
45. LOHITIC (Kami).	*First Person.*	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*
Nominative. a	ka-i.	nan.	hana-i
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	ka-i-un.	nan-un.	hana-i un.
Status prædicativus. d			
46. LOHITIC (Tunglhu).			
Nominative. a	khwa.	na.	wa.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c			
Status prædicativus. d			
47. MUNDA. Ho. (Tickell. A. S. B. ix.)			
Nominative. a	áing (ing).	um.	aÿ (aÿo). (ni, ini, *this*).
Status subjectivus. b	áing√; or, áing√áing.		
Casus obliquus. c	áingia (ing-a).	umm-a.	aÿ-a.
Status prædicativus. d	áingia □; or abbreviated prefix ? (J. A. S. B., 1853, p. 28.)		
48. MUNDA (Sinhbhum-Kol).			
Nominative. a	aing.	um.	ini.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	iyan.	umma.	ini.
Status prædicativus. d			
49. MUNDA (Soutal-Kol).			
Nominative. a	inge.	umge	uni.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	ingrea.	ami.	unea.
Status prædicativus. d			□t. apa-t, *his father.* (J. A. S. B. 1853, p. 75.)
50 MUNDA (Bhumij-Kol).			
Nominative. a	ing.	am.	ini.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	inya.	umma.	aige.
Status prædicativus. d			
51. MUNDA (Mundala-Kol).			
Nominative. a	ing.	am.	inni.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	jhatana.	am-atana.	anner-atana.
Status prædicativus. d			
52. TAMULIC (Canarese).			M. F. N.
Nominative. a	nânu (yân, yèn).	nîn (ni).	avanu, avalu, adu.
Status subjectivus. b	√ène. Present.	√i.	
	√ènu. Preter., Fut. & Neg.	√I.	√âne. √âlĕ. √ade.
	√ènu. Second future.	√i., iye.	√ânu. √âlu. √itu.
Casus obliquus. c.	nänna.	nînna.	√ânu. √âlu. √itu.
Status prædicativus. d	nân □.	nîn. □	avana. avala. adera.
53. TAMULIC (Tamil).			
Nominative. a	nân (yân).	ní (un).	ivan. ival. idu.
Status subjectivus. b	√en.	√ây.	√ân. √âl. √adu.
Casus obliquus. c	en-adu (*mei*, enn-udeiya, *mens*).	un-adu (nin-adu).	ivan-adu
Status prædicativus. d	en □.	un □.	

	Plural.			
First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*	*Sign of Genitive & Adjective.*	*Plural.*
ka-chi.	nan-chi.	hun-na (hani-chi).		-chi.
ka-chi-un.	nan-chi-un.	hani-chi-un.	-un.	
ne.	na-the.	wa-the.		-the.
alla.	appe.	a-ko.		-ko.
allé-a.	appé-a.	ako-a.	-a.	
alle-a.	appe-a.	en-ko-a.	-a.	-ko.
allaa.	appe.	un-kure.		-kur.
			-a.	
abusaban.				
			-a.	
allege.	inkoghi.	an-ko.		-ko.
ahu-atana.	api-atana.	anko-atana.	-atana.	
nâvu (nâm, èm).	nivu (nîr, ir).	M. F. N. ăvaru. ăvu.		-ru. -m.
√ève.	√iri.	√âre. √ăve.		-vu.
√ĕvu.	√iri.	√ăru. √ăvu.		-gal.
√èvu.	√iri.	√âru. √âvu.		
nămma.	nimma.	avara. avugala.	-a.	
nam □.	nim □.			
nâm (nân-gal).	nir (nin-gal).	ivar (ivar-gal) ivei-gal.		-m.
√ôm.	√ir-gal.	√ar-gal. (m. f.) √ana. (n).		-r.
nam-adu (en-gal).	um-adu (un-gal).	ivar-adu (ivar-gal-udeiya).	-adu. (*id.*) udeiya. (*udei, proprium.*)	-gal.
nam □.	um □.			

	Singular.		
	First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*
54. TAMULIC (Telugu).			
Nominative. a	nénu.	nívu.	vádu. adi.
Status subjectivus. b	√nu.	√vu.	√du. √di.
Casus obliquus. c	nâ-yokka.	ni-yokka.	vâni. dâni.
Status prædicativus. d	nâ □	ni □.	
55. TAMULIC (Malabar).			
Nomiaative. a	nan (yan).	ni (nir).	avan. aval. ahthu.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	enn-udeyathu, en-athu.	umm-udiathu, um-athu.	avan-udeyathu.
Status prædicativus. d			
56. TAMULIC (Malayalim).			
Nominative. a	gnân.	ni.	avan. aval. ada.
Status subjectivus. b	gaân√.	ni√.	
Casus obliquus. c	en-re.	nin-re.	avan-re.
Status prædicativus. d	ini-kulla □. Dative+ulla.	nani-kulla □.	avanna+ulla □.
57. TAMULIC (Gond).			
Nominative. a	nanna (nak).	imma.	wur, ad.
Status subjectivus. b	√an.	√i.	√ur.
Casus obliquus. c	no-wa.	ni-wa.	wunna.
Status prædicativus. d	no-wa □.		
58. TAMULIC (Brahví ?).			
Nomiaative. a	i.	ní.	o(od); (dâdad); e(e
Status subjectivus. b	√t (ta), √v (va).	√s (sa).	√k.
Casus obliquus. c	kanâ.	nâ.	o-nâ. dâ-nâ. e-nâ.
Status prædicativus. d	kanâ □.		
59. TAMULIC (Curgi and Todava).			
Nominative. a	nan, one. (T)	nin. ni. (T)	av. ad. (T)
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	en-na, en-na. (T)	nin-na. nin-na. (T)	ava-na. ada-na. (T
Status prædicativus. d			
60. TAMULIC (Uráon-Kol).			
Nominative. a	enan.	nien.	asan.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	en-gbi.	nien-gbi.	as-ghi.
Status prædicativus. d.	im □. (im-bas, *my father*, J. A. S B. 1853, p. 32.; ing-kos, *my child*).		
61. TAMULIC Rajmahâli-Kol).			
Nominative. a	en	nin.	ath.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus subjectivus. c	ong-ki.	ing-ki.	ahi-ki.
Status prædicativus. d			
62. UGRIC (Finnish).			
Nominative. a	minä (mie. ma. mä.)	sinae (sie. sa. sä.)	hän (se ?)
Status subjectivus. b	√n (ni).	√t (s).	√.(hn).[√pi,√wi].
Casus obliquus. c			
Status prædicativus. d	□ ni.	□ si.	□ nsa. □ sa.

	PLURAL.			
First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*	*Sign of Genitive & Adjective.*	*Plural.*
mèmu. √mu. mâ-yokka. mâ □.	miru. √ru. mî-yokka. mi □.	vârn. avi. √ru. √vi. vâri. vâri.	-di. -yokka.	-mu. -ru.
nan-gal (nâm).	nin-gal.	aver-kal. (avei).	-athu.	-m. -r.
en-gal-ndeyathu, em-athu.	un-gal-ndeyathu. um-athu.	oné (?)	-ndeyathu.	-gal.
gnan-gal (nâm).	nin-gal.	ava-r. ava.	-re.	-m.
nan-galude (namm-ude).	nin-ga de (nin-gal-ude).	ava-ru-de ava-yu-de.	-de.	-r. -gal.
gnangal-kulla □.	ningal-kulla □.	avei-kulla.		
mak (wak). mar, *before verbs.* √um. mow-an (wo-man)	ima-t (me-kum) imar, *before verbs.* √ir. mi-wan.	wur-g. √urg. wurran.	-na. -an.	-t. -g.
nan. √n (*n.* na). nanâ.	nunî. √re (ri). numâ.	of k ; dâf k' ; ef k. √r (re). oftâ. daftâ. eftâ.	-nâ.	-k. -m.
eng. wom. (T)	ning. nimma.	avaru. adám.	-na.	-g. -m.
en-gal-e. emma dd. (T)	nin-gal-e. nimma.			-ru.
en.	asu.			
em-hi.	ass-ghi.		-ghi.	
nam (om).	nina.	asabar (awar).		-r.
nam-ki (emki).	nim-ki.	asaberi-ki.	-ki.	
me (met).	te (tet).	he (het) (ne ?)		-t.
√mme.	√tte.	√[wat]t. (ht).		
□ mme.	□ nne.	□ nsa. □ sa.		

	Singular.		
	First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*
63. UGRIC (Lapponian: Norwegian).			
Nominative. a	mon.	ton.	son.
Status subjectivus. b	-m.	-k.	-.
Casus obliquus. c			
Status prædicativus. d	-m.	-t.	-s.
1. cum nom.	-m.	-k.	-.
2. cum verbis [preterite]			
64. UGRIC. (Syrianian).			
Nominative. a	me.	te.	sɣa.
Status subjectivus. b	√.	√n. √.	√.
Casus obliquus. c	me-nam.	te-nad.	sɣ-läo.
Status prædicativus. d	□ m.	□ d.	□ s. (√s cum verbo definito.)
65. UGRIC (Tsheremissian).			
Nominative. a	min.	tin.	tidä.
Status subjectivus. b	√m.	√t.	√s, √z′e, √.
Casus obliquus. (genitive.) c	min-in.	tin-in.	tidä-n.
Status prædicativus. d	□ m.	□ t.	□ z′e.
66. UGRIC (Ostiakian: Irtishian).			
Nominative. a	ma.	neñ.	teu.
Status subjectivus. b	√m.	√n.	√d. (t).
Casus obliquus. (locat.) c	mana.	neñna.	teu na.
Status prædicativus. d			
1. cum nom.	□ m.	□ n.	□ t.
2. cum verbis transitivis	√m.	√n.	√t.
67. UGRIC (Hungarian).			
Nominative. a	en (ma)	te.	ö.
Status subjectivus. b			
1. intransitive.	√k, √m.	√sz, √l.	√. √n.
2. passive.	√m.	√l	√k.
Casus obliquus. (accusat.) c	engem-et.	tiged-et.	öt-et.
Status prædicativus. d			
1. cum nom.	□ m.	□ d.	□ ja.
2. cum verbis transitivis	√m.	√d.	√ja.
68. UGRIC (Mordvinian).			
Nominative. a	mon.	ton.	son.
Status subjectivus. (indefinite.) b	√n.	√t. (k).	√s (zo).
Casus obliquus. c			
Status prædicativus. d			
1. cum nom.	□ m (n).	□ t.	□ zo (nzo).
2. cum verbis.	√m ak. (1+2) *me+tu.*	√t an. (2+1) *te+ego.*	√a.
	√m am. (1+3) *me+ille.*	√nz at. (3+2) *ille+te*	√ze (3) *id.*
	√m isk. (1+2) *me+vos.*	√d ez. (2 pl.+3) *vobis+id.*	√ok. (3+2 plur.) *id+vos.*
69. SAMOIEDIC (Dialects).			
Nominative. a	O. man (mat).	tan.	tam, tap.
	J. man′.	pudar.	pu da.
	K. man.	tan (than).	di.
	Ja. mod′i.	tod′i	ni toda.
	T. maunan.	tannan.	se te.
Characteristic consonants of miscellaneous pronominal suffixes.	m, b, p, v, u, n.	t, t′, d, d′, r, l, lr, n.	t, t′, d, d′, r.

	Plural.			
First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*	*Sign of Genitive & Adjective.*	*Plural.*
mi. -pa.	ti. -baettet (ppet).	si. -k.		
-mek. -mek.	-dek. -dek.	-sek. -.		-k (t).
mi. √m. mi-an. □ nu m.	ti. √n ny d. ti-an. □ ny d.	nya. √nys. √s ny s. ny-län. □ ny s.	-'an.	-d ? -s.
mä. √na. mä-mnän. □ na.	tä. √da. tämdän. □ da.	ninä. √s't.√t. [be. be-s]. ninä-n. □ s't.	-n.	-a. -t.
meñ. √u. meñna. □ u. √u.	neñ. √då (ta). neña (?) □ den (ten). √den.	teg. √t. teg na. □ t. √t.	-na.	-k. -n.
mi.	ti.	ök.		-k (t).
√nk. √nk. mink-et. □ nk. √juk.	√tok. √tok. titek-et. □ tok. √jatok.	√nak. √nak. ök-et. □ jok. √jak.		
min. √nok.	tin. √do (nk).	sin. √t, √st (2).		
□ mok (nok).	□ nk.	□ st.		-k (t).
√m isk (1+2) *nos+tu.* √m ia (1+3) *nos+illi.*	√d ezr. (?)	√nze. √z.		
mę (mi). man'a. mi. mo'di. men.	tę. pudara. s'i. to'di. tęn.			

	Singular.		
	First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*
70. TATARIC (Castren).			
Nominative. a	ben, men, min.	sen, sin, än.	ol, o, kini.
Status subjectivus. b cum verbis.	√man (pan-ban).	√san.	√.(sin, in imperat).
Casus obliquus. c	ben-i, etc. *mei.* ben-inki, etc. *meus.*		
Status prædicativus. d			
1. cum nomin.	□ m.	□ ñ.	□ i (in). □ si (sin).
2. cum verbis [preterite]	√m.	√ ñ.	√.
71. TATARIC (Yakute: Boehtling).			
Nominative. a	min.	än.	kini, bu (*hic*), ôl (*ille*).
Status subjectivus. b	√ben (pen, men).	√ghen (gen, ken).	√-.
Casus obliquus. c	miy-iänä (*meus*).	äy-iänä (*tuus*).	kin-iänä (*suus*), mane (*hunc*), onu (*illum*).
Status prædicativus. d			
1. cum nom. [possessive]	□ m.	□ ñ.	□ ta(ten). □ a (en).
2. cum verbis [perfect]	√-m.	√ñ.	√ a.
72. TATARIC (Osmanli).			
Nominative. a	ben.	sen.	ol (o), bu (*hic*).
Status subjectivus. b	√im.	√sen.	√-.
Casus obliquus. c	benim. (genitive.)	seniñ.	onuñ
Status prædicativus. d			
1. cum nom. [possessive]	□ m.	□ñ.	□ i (in). □ si (sin).
2. cum verbis. [preterite]	√m.	√ñ.	√.
73. MONGOLIC (Buriatian).			
Nominative. a	bi.	s'i, c'i.	ene.
Status subjectivus. b	√p, √m.	√s', √c'.	√-.
Casus obliquus. c	min { (mini, mei). mni. mn. m.	s'in, c'in, tin. { s'ini. sni. sn. s.	eneni.
Status prædicativus. d	□ m.	□ s', □ c'.	□ n (□ ni).
74. MONGOLIC (Sokpa).			
Nominative. a	mi (bi, abu).	cha.	tha.
Status subjectivus. b			
Casus obliquus. c	mini.	chini.	thani.
Status prædicativus. d			
75. TUNGUSIC (Mandshu).			
Nominative. a	bi.	si.	i.
Status subjectivus. b	bi√.	si √.	i√.
Casus obliquus. c	{ min-i (or mi-ni ?) *mei.*	{ sin-i.	{ ini.
Status prædicativus. d	{ min-ingge (*meus*). mini □.	{ sin-ingge.	{ in-ingge.
76. TUNGUSIC (Nyertshinsk).			
Nominative. a	bi.	si, s'i.	(i) nuñan.
Status subjectivus. b	√bi, √n, √f.	√si, √s.	(√n).
Casus obliquus. c	min.	sin.	√in.
Status prædicativus. d	(□ bi, □ u, □ f).	(□ si, □ s).	□ n.

	PLURAL.		*Sign of Genitive & Adjective.*	*Plural.*
First Person.	*Second Person.*	*Third Person.*		
bis, bister, bisigi. √bis (pis, mis).	sis, sisler, siler, äsigi. √sis (ser).	onlar, onnar, kinilär. √lar, √sinler, in imper.		-lar. -t.-s.-r.
			-i. -inki.	
□ bis (pis, mis). √bis (pis, mis).	□ ñis. √ñis.	□ lary. √ lar.		
bisigi.	äsigi.	kinilär (balar (*hi*).		-lar.
√bet (pet, met). bis-länä.	√ghet (get, ket). äs-länä.	√lar. kin-iän-när-ä.	-iänä.	
□ bet. √bet.	□ ghet. √-get.	□ lara. √-lara.		
biz (bizler). √iz. bizum (bizleriñ).	siz (sizler). √siz. sizi̇ñ.	onlar, bunlar. √ler. onlarun̄.	-ñ. -iñki.	-lar.
□ -mis. √k.	□ -ñis. √ñiz.	□leri(lerin).□i(in).□si(sin). √ ler.		
bida. √bida (bda, mda). manai.	ta. √ta, √t. tanai.	√-.	-i.	-da.
□ manai (□mnai).	□ tanai.	□ n (□ ni).		
mini ?	chini ?	thani ?	ni.	ni ?
be (muse) be√. {men-i. {men-ingge.	sue. sue√. {suen-i. {suen-ingge.	tche. tche √. {tchen-i. {tchen-ingge.	-i,ngge.	-sa, ta, ri. (sei, urse, jergi, tumen, gemu.)
bu. (√wun.) mun. □ wun.	s'i. (√sun). sun. □ sun.	(c'e) nuñar. (√tin) √l. c'en. □ tin.		-r. -l.

THIRD

COMPARATIVE TABLE OF THE NUMERALS

	I.	II.	III.	IV.	V.	VI.
1. Chinese	'i	eul	san	ssé	'u	lu
2. Gyami - -	iku	liangku (ar)	sanku	siku	wuku	leuku
3. Kong-Chinese - Canton (spoken).	yut	ni	sam	si	ung	lok
4. Tai.—*Siamese* - - -	nüng	song	sam	si	ha	hok
5. Tai.—*Ahom*	ling	sang	sam	si	ha	ruk
6. Tai.—*Laos* -	nüng	song	sam	si	ha	hok
7. Tai.—*Khamti* -	nüng	song	sam	si	ha	hok
8. Tai.—*Kassia?* - - -	wei	ar	lai	sau	san	hinriu
9. Tai.—*Shan* - - - Tenasserim.	nein	htsong	htsan	htse	ba	hoht
10. Trans-Himalayan. — *Tibetan* (spoken.)	chik	nyi	sum	zhyi	gna	thu
11. Trans-Himalayan. —*Horpa* N.W. Tibet. Bucharia.	ra	gne	su	hla	gwe	chho
12. Trans-Himalayan.—*Thochu-Sifan* N. E. Tibet. China.	ari	gnari	kshiri	gzhare	ware	khatare
13. Trans-Himala.—*Gyarung-Sifan* N. E. Tibet. China.	kati	kanes	kasam	kadi	kunggno	kutok
14. Trans-Himala.—*Manyak-Sifan* N. E. Tibet. China.	tabi	nabi	sibi	rebi	gnabi	trubi
15. Trans-Himalayan.—*Takpa* West of Kwombo.	thi	nai	sum	pli	liagne	kro
16. Sub-Himalayan.—*Kenaveri* Setlej basin.	chik	ni	sum	zhi	gna	tuk
17. Sub-Himalayan. — *Sarpa* - West of Gandakéan basin.	chik	nyi	sum	zhyi	gna	tuk
18. Sub-Himalayan. —*Sunwār* Gandakéan basin.	ka	nishi	sang	le	gno	ruk
19. Sub-Himalayan.—*Gurung* Gandakéan basin.	krì	ni	song	pli	gna	tu

APPENDIX.

IN NINETY-SEVEN LANGUAGES.

	VII.	VIII.	IX.	X.	XI.	XII.	XX.	C.	M.
1.	tsi	pa	kieu	shi (sun)	—	—	eul shi	pe	tsian
2.	chhiku	paku	chyuku	ishsa	—	—	airsa	ipe	—
3.	chhat	pat	kau	sap	—	—	—	pak	chin
4.	chet	pet	kau	sip	—	—	ye sip	voi	phan
5.	chit	pet	kau	sip	—	—	sau	pak	—
6.	tset	pet	kau	sip	—	—	sau nüng	hoi	—
7.	tset	pet	kau	sip	—	—	sau	pak	heng
8.	hinian	prah	kandai	shi pon	kad wei	kad ar	ar phon	shi spah	shi hajar
9.	tsit	tet	kaut	tsit	—	—	htsong	hpat	—
10.	dun	gye	guh	chuh (thamba)	chuh chi	chu nyi	nyi chu	gyathamba	tong
11.	zne	rhiéé	go	sga	—	—	naska	rhya	—
12.	stare	khrare	rgure	hadure	—	—	gninaso	akshi	—
13.	kushnes	oryet	kungga	sih	—	—	kinnis si	parye	—
14.	skwibi	zibi	gubi	chechihi	—	—	nachahi	teje	—
15.	nis	gyet	dugu	pchi	—	—	khali	—	—
16.	dun	gya	gu	chuthamba	chuchik	chuni	nishu	gyathamba	tong
17.	dyun	gye	guh	chuh	—	—	nyi shu	gya	—
18.	chani	yoh	guh	sa shi	—	—	khalka	swaika	—
19.	nis	pre	kub	chuh	—	—	kuti	—	—

	I.	II.	III.	IV.	V	VI.
20. SUB-HIMALAYAN.—*Magar* - Gandakéan basin.	kat	nis	song	buli	banga	—
21. SUB-HIMALAYAN.—*Newár* - Between Gand. & Koséan bas.	chhi	ni	son	pi	gna	khu
22. SUB-HIMALAYAN.—*Murmi* - Between Gand. and Koséan bas.	ghrik	gni	som	bli	gna	dhu
23. SUB-HIMALAYAN.—*Limbú* Koséan basin.	thit	nyetsh	syum sh	li sh	gna sh	tuk sh
24. SUB-HIMALAYAN.—*Kiranti* Koséan basin.	ektai?	hasat?	sumya	laya	gnaya	tukya
25. SUB-HIMALAYAN. — *Lepcha* - Tishtéan basin	kat	nyet	sam	phali	pha gnon	tarok
26. SUB-HIMALAYAN. — *Bhutanese* Manaséan basin. (?)	chi	nyi	sum	zhi	gna	dhu
27. SUB-HIMALAYAN.—*Chepang* Nepal-Terai.	yazho	nhizho	sumzho	ploizho	pumazho	krukzho
28. LOHITIC. — *Burmese* - Burmah and Arakan.	tit (ta)	nhit	thong	le	nga	khyauk
29. LOHITIC.—*Dhimál* - Between Konki and Dhorla	e-long	nhe-long	sum lang	dia long	nalong	tulong
30. LOHITIC.—*Kachari-Bodo* - - Migrat. 88° to 93½° and 25° to 27°.	ehe	nai (gni)	tham	bre	ba	ro
31. LOHITIC. — *Garo* - - - - 90° to 91° E. long. 25° to 26° N. lat.	sha	gini	gi tham	bri	bonga	dok (krok)
32. LOHITIC.— *Changlo* 91° to 92° E. long.	thur	ngik ching	sam	phi	nga	khung
33. LOHITIC.— *Mikir* - Nowgong	ichi	hini	ka thamu	phi li	phong	thorok
34 LOHITIC.—*Dophla* - - 92° 50′ to 97° N. lat.	aken	ani	a am	a pli	ango	ak ple
35. LOHITIC.—*Miri* 94° to 97° E. long. (?)	ako	a ni ko	a um ko	a pi ko	a ngo ko	a keng ko
36. LOHITIC.—*Abor-Miri* -	ako	aniko	aomko	apiko	pilingoko	akeko
37. LOHITIC.—*Abor* - - 97° to 99° East long.	ako	ani	angom	api	pilango	akye
38. LOHITIC.—*Sibsagor-Miri*	atero	ngoye	auma	apie	üngo	akünge
39. LOHITIC. — *Singpho* 27° to 28° North lat.	aima	nkhong	ma sum	meli	manga	krn
40. LOHITIC.—*Naga Tribes* - - 93° to 97° E. long. 23° N. lat. (Mithan). E. of Sibsagor.	atta	anyi	a zam	ali	aga	arok
41. LOHITIC.— *Naga Tribes* (Namsang).	vanthe	vanyi	van ram	heli	banga	irok
42. LOHITIC.—*Naga tribes* Nowgong	katang	anna	asam	pazr	pungu	tarok

	VII.	VIII.	IX.	X.	XI.	XII.	XX.	C.	M.
20.	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
21.	nhe	chya	gun	sanho	—	—	sang sanho (nie)	gun sanho (sat chi)	—
22.	nis	pre	kuh	chiwai (kun)	—	—	nhi shu	bokal gna	—
23.	nu sh	yet sh	phang sh	thi bong	—	—	ni bong	thi bung gip	—
24.	bhâgya	reya	phangya	kip	—	—	—	—	—
25.	ka kyok	kakeu	ka kyot	ka tf	katip	nyctip	kha kat	kha pha gnon	—
26.	dun	gyé	gu	cha tham	—	—	nyi sho (khechik)	khé gna	—
27.	chanazho	prapzho	takuzho	gyihzho	—	—	—	—	—
28.	khunnhit	shyit	ko	she	she tit	she nhit	nhit she	taya	—
29.	nhilong	yelong	kuhalong	telong	—	—	elong bisa	na bisa	—
30.	sni	jat	chku	jl	—	—	chokai ha (bisha che)	bisha ba	—
31.	sni	chet	shku	skang	chishá	chigini	chiskang (rung)	rung bonga	—
32.	zum	yen	gu	se (song)	song thur	song nyik ching	khai thur	khenga	nisi nik ting dang khaise
33.	thorchi	nirkep (10.2)	chirkep (10.1)	kep	kepaichi	kepahini	kepa kep (ingkol)	phar	—
34.	kanag	plag nag	kayo	rang	rang la akin	rang la ani	rang chang	—	—
35.	ki oit ko	pi ni ko	ko nang ko	u ying ko	u ying ko a ko	u ying ko aniko	u ying an iko	—	—
36.	kunitko	punitko	ko nangko	uyingko	—	—	irlingko	—	—
37.	konange	pini	kinide	üyinge	—	—	üying anyiko	üying üyingko	—
38.	künnide	pinye	konange	üyinge	—	—	—	—	—
39.	sinit	matsat	tsekhu	si	si ai	si nkhong	khun	lat-sa	hing
40.	anath	achet	aku	ban	—	—	cha	puga	—
41.	ingit	isat	ikhu	ichi	ichi vanthe	ichi vanyi	ruak nyi	chathe	cha ichi
42.	tanet	te	taku	tarr	—	—	matsü	rokrü	—

	I.	II.	III.	IV.	V.	VI.
43. Lohitic.—*Naga tribes* Tengsa.	khatu	annat	asam	phale	phungu	thelok
44. Lohitic.—*Naga tribes* Tablung, N. of Sibsagor.	cha	ih	lem	pili	nga	vok
45. Lohitic.—*Naga tribes* Kharí. Jorhat.	akhet	anne	asam	phali	phanga	tarok
46. Lohitic.—*Naga tribes* Angami, South.	po	kane	sü	deh	pangu	soru
47. Lohitic.—*Kuki* N. E. of Chittagong.	katka	nika	tumka	lika	rungaka	ruka
48. Lohitic.—*Khyeng* (*Shyu*) 19° to 21° N. lat. Arakan.	nhat	pan nhi	thum	lhi	nghau	sauk
49. Lohitic.—*Kami* Kuladan R. Arakan.	ha	ni	ka tun	ma li	pang nga	ta u
50. Lohitic.—*Kumi* Kuladan R. Arakan.	ha	nhu	tum	pa lu	pan	ta ru
51. Lohitic.—*Shendus* 22° to 23°, and 93° to 94°.	mekha	meny	me thao	me pulli	mepa	me churru
52. Lohitic.—*Mru* Arakan. Chittagong.	loung	pre	shun	ta li	ta nga	ta ru
53. Lohitic.—*Sak* Nauf River, East.	su war	neio	thin	pri	nga	khyouk
54. Lohitic.—*Tunglhu* Tenasserim.	ta	ne	thung	lit	ngat	ther
55. Munda.—*Ho* Kolehan.	miad	barria	appia	upunia	moya	turuia
56. Munda.—*Sinhbhum Kol* Chyebossa.	mi	barria	apia	upunia	moya	turia
57. Munda.—*Sontal* Chyebossa.	midh	barria	pia	ponia	monego-tang	turui
58. Munda.—*Bhumij* Chyebossa.	moy	barria	apia	upunia	monaya	turuya
59. Munda.—*Mundala* Chota Nagpur.	mia	baria	apia	upnia	moria	turia
60. Tamulic.—*Canarese*	ondu	eradu	muru	nalku	ayidu	aru
61. Tamulic.—*Tamil*	onru	irandu	munru	nalu	anju	aru
62. Tamulic.—*Telugu*	oka	rendu	mudu	nalugu	ayidu	aru
63. Tamulic.—*Malabar*	ondu	irandu	mondu	nalu	inthu	aru
64. Tamulic.—*Malayalam*	onna	renda	munnar	nala	anja	ara
65. Tamulic.—*Gond*	nudi	ranu	munu	nalu	saiyan	sarong
66. Tamulic.—*Brahui*	asit	irat	muoit	Sk. char	panj	shash
67. Tamulic.—*Tuluva*	onji	erad	muji	nalu	ayinu	aji

	VII.	VIII.	IX.	X.	XI.	XII.	XX.	C.	M.
43.	thanyet	thesep	thaku	thelu	—	—	machi	mesung phungu	—
44.	nith	thath	thu	pan	—	—	—	—	—
45.	tani	sachet	tekü	tarah	—	—	makhi	rukra	—
46.	thene	thetha	thaku	kürr	—	—	makü	kre	—
7.	sarika	riktka	koka	sumka	—	—	—	rasa	sunka
4									
48.	she	sat	ko	ha	—	—	kur	klaat	—
49.	sa ri	ka ya	ta ko	ha suh	—	—	ku suh	ta ra	—
50.	sa ru	ta ya	ta kau	hau	—	—	a pum re	chum wari	—
51.	me sharri	me charia	me chuku	me hra	hlekha	hle ny	meku	ya kha	sho kha
52.	ra nhit	ri yat	taku	ha	—	—	pi ra mi	—	—
53.	tha ni	a tseit	ta fu	si su	—	—	hun	taya	—
54.	nwot	that	kut	tahsi	—	—	he	taloyeu	—
55.	aya	irilia	arrea	gel	gelmiad	gelbarria	hissi	mi sow	—
56.	iya	lrlia	area	gelea	—	—	hissi	moy hissi	—
57.	lair	iral	are	gel	—	—	—	monay hissi	—
58.	Sk. sath	ath	nou	das	—	—	—	sou	—
59.	Sk. sath	ath	noko	dasgo	—	—	bis	midso	—
60.	elu (yelu)	entu	ombhattu	hattu (pattu)	10+1	10+2	pat (ippatu)	nuru	savira
61.	ezhu	ettu	onbadu	patta	—	—	irupadu	nuru	—
62.	edu	enimidi	tommidi	padi	—	—	iruvai	nuru	—
63.	elu	ettu	onpathu	pat thu	—	—	irupathu	nuru (vanda)	—
64.	ezha	etta	ombada	patta	—	—	iruvada	nura	—
65.	yenu	anamur	urmah	pada	—	—	bisa	nur	—
66.	haft	hasht	nuh	dah	yazda	duazda	bist	sad	—
67.	al	ename	orambo	pattu	—	—	irvo	nuru	—

	I.	II.	III.	IV.	V.	VI.
68. Tamulic. — *Toduva*	won	edd	minn	nonk	yajj	orr
69. Tamulic. — *Uraon-kol*	unta	enotan	manotan	nakhotan	Sk. panje	se
70. Uoric. — *Finnish*	yksi	kaksi	kolme	neljä	viisi	kuusi
71. Ugric. — *Esthonian*	üks (üts)	kaks (kats)	kolm	nelli	wiis	kuus
72. Uoric. — *Lapponian*	akt (oft)	kvekte	kolm	nielj	vit	kot
73. Ugric. — *Syrianian*	ötik	kyk	kujim	njolj	vit	kvait
74. Ugric. — *Tsheremissian*	ik	kok	kum	nil	vis	kut
75. Ugric. — *Mordvinian*	väike (vä)	kavto	kolmo	nile	väte	koto
76. Ugric. — *Ostiakian*	it (i. ja)	kat	chudem	njeda	vet	chut
77. Ugric. — *Hungarian*	egy	kettö	harom	negy	öt	hat
78. Uoric. — *Vogulian*	äkvä (vä)	kit	korom	nila	ät	kot
79. Samoiedian	op	side (siri)	när	tet	samlik	mat
80. Tataric. — *Yakut*	bir	ikki	üs	tüört	biäs	alta
81. Tataric. — *Uigur*	bir	iki	ütsh	tört	bish	alty
82. Tataric. — *Tshuvash*	per	ikke	wisse	dwata	pilik	olta
83. Tataric. — *Osmanli*	bir	iki	uc'	dört	besh	alti
84. Mongolic. — *Ölöt*	nike	khoyor	gurban	durbun	tabun	zurgan
85. Mongolic. — *Sokpa* N. E.? Tibet.	nege	hoyur	korba	tirba	thaba	chorka
86. Mongolic. — *Aimak*	nikka	koyar	ghorban	dorban	tabun	jolan
87. Tungusic. — *Mandshu*	emu	jue	ilan	duin	sunja	ningun
88. Caucasc. — *Lazian*	ar	zur	jum	otch	chut	ash
89. Caucasic. — *Suanian*	eshchu	ieru	semi	wooshthch	wochushth	uskhwa
90. Caucasic. — *Mingrelian*	arti	shiri	sumi	otchi	chuthi	apchshui
91. Caucasic. — *Georgian*	erthi	ori	sami	othchi	chut hi	ekhwssi
92. Caucasic. — *Abchasian*	aka	wiba	chiba	phshiba	chuba	fba

	VII.	VIII.	IX.	X.	XI.	XII.	XX.	C.	M.
68.	—	ett	onbod	pott	—	—	ivvod	onnur	—
69.	sat	ate	no	das	—	—	bis	se	—
70.	seitsemän	kahdeksan (10.2)	yhdeksan (10.1)	kymmenen	yksi toista kymmentä	—	kaksi kymmentä	sata	tuhat
71.	seitse	kattesa	üttesa	kümme	—	—	—	—	—
72.	čeč	kaktse	aktse	lokke	—	—	—	—	—
73.	sizim	kökjaamys (10.2)	okmys (10.1)	das	dasötik	daskyk	kyzj	sjo	tüsacja (sjurs)
74.	sim	kändäxse (10.2)	endexse (10.1)	lu	luat iktät	luat koktat	koklu	syde	tizem
75.	tabet (sabet)	nida (nit)	arjon	jon	ja chat jon	kat chat jon	chus	sot	taras
76.	het	nyolcz (10.2)	kilencz (10.1)	tiz	tiz enegy	tizen kettö	husz	szaz	ezer
77.	siu	sindet	chasawat	luzeyu	—	—	—	—	—
78.	sisem	kavkso	väikse	kämen	—	—	—	koms	—
79.	sättä	aghes	toghus	uon	uon bir	uon ikki	sürbä	süs	tesensa
80.	yidi	sekiz	toghuz	on	onbir	onikki	igirmi	yus	ming
81.	sat	njalalu	antalu	lava	au kuiplu	—	kit kuiplu	kus	—
82.	sicce	sakkyr	tuhur	wonna	woni per	won ikke	sirim	sur	pin
83.	yedi	sekiz	dokuz	on	onbir	oniki	yigirmi	yuz	bing
84.	dolon	naiman	yese	arban	arban nike	arban khoyor	khorin	—	—
85.	tolo	nema	yeso	arba	—	—	hore	chovo	—
86.	jurghan	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
87.	nadan	jakon (10.2)	onyun (10.1)	juan	juan emu	juan jue	orin	tanggo	minggan
88.	shkit	ovro	cchoro	wit	witwar	witzur	öc	osh	shilia
89.	lshkwid	ara	cchara	iehsth	ieshth eshchu	ieshth ieru	ieruieshth	ashir	athas
90.	shqwithi	ruo	cchoro	withi	—	—	etshi	oshi	—
91.	shwidi	rwa	zehra	athi	—	—	ozi	assi	—
92.	bishba	aaba	shba	shwaba	shweiza	shwewa	eshwa	shke	—

	I.	II.	III.	IV.	V.	VI.
93. Basĸ	bat	bi	hirur	laur	bortz	sei
94. Coptic	va	snous	somnt	ftov (ftu)	tiv (tu)	sov
95. Hebrew	ĕkhad	shnayim	shloshâh	arbá ghâh	khamishâh	shishâh
96. Pehlevi (Coins)	achad	tarein	talata	arba	khomasha	shata
97. Sanskrit	ekas	dvâu	trayas	katvâras	panka	shaś

	VII.	VIII.	IX.	X.	XI.	XII.	XX.	C.	M.
93.	zazpi	zertzi	bederatzi	hamar	hameiza	hamabi	hegoi	ehun	milliun
94.	sashf	shmun	psis	mét	metva	metsnous	guot	she	sho
95.	shibghâh	shmonâh	tishghâh	ghaśârâh	akhadghâśâr	shnighâśâr	ghesrim	mèâhē	člĕph
96.	sheba	tomena	tisha	ashra	yaj dah	duajdeh	vist	sat	—
97.	sapta	ashťau	nava	daśa	ekâdaśa	dvâdaśa	vinsati	śatam	sahaśram

ANALYTICAL INDEX.

THE END.

LONDON:
A. and G. A. SPOTTISWOODE,
New-street-Square